



973.206  
05n4p  
v.4  
no.21-30  
1788821

M. L.

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL  
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01075 9519





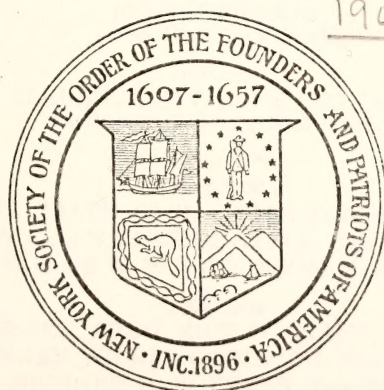
# American Territory in Turkey;

or, Admiral Farragut's Visit to  
Constantinople, and the Extra-  
territorialty of Robert College

An Address by  
Ralph E. Prime, LL.D., D.C.L.  
before the New York Society  
of the Order of the Founders  
and Patriots of America,  
February 14th, 1908

Pub. 21-30

1908-11







1788821

Officers of the New York Society Order of  
the Founders and Patriots of America

---

*Governor*

EDWARD HAGAMAN HALL,  
Tribune Building, New York.

*Deputy Governor*

GEORGE CLINTON BATCHELLER,  
696 Broadway, New York.

*Chaplain*

REV. FREDERICK W. CUTLER,  
Yonkers, N. Y.

*Secretary*

WILLIAM WHITE KNAPP,  
289 Fourth Avenue, New York.

*Treasurer*

MATTHEW HINMAN,  
416 Broadway, New York.

*State Attorney*

EDGAR ABEL TURRELL,  
76 William Street, New York.

*Registrar*

THEODORE GILMAN,  
55 William Street, New York.

*Genealogist*

JOHN ELDERKIN,  
Lotus Club, New York.

*Historian*

CLARENCE ETTIENNE LEONARD,  
44 East 23rd Street, New York.

*Councilors*

1905-1908

COL. RALPH EARL PRIME, Yonkers, N. Y.  
WILLIAM ALLEN MARBLE, New York.  
CHARLES W. B. WILKINSON, New York.

1906-1909

MAJOR-GEN. FREDERICK D. GRANT, New York  
HENRY WICKES GOODRICH, New York.  
RICHARD H. ROBERTS, New York.

1907-1910

GEN. STEWART L. WOODFORD, New York.  
THEODORE FITCH, New York.  
COL. HENRY W. SACKETT, New York.

1788821

Office of the New York State Library  
the Foundation and Patronage of Learning



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2012

<http://archive.org/details/publicationsv4orde>



## American Territory in Turkey

---

Coincidences sometimes have mighty influence by way of inciting to human action. Utterly disconnected events, when grouped together, and operating upon human fears are marvelously effective. When the subjects of such fears are ignorant of the fact of no relation of one event to the other, and possessed with the belief of a relation which does not exist, and are not at liberty to inquire and be advised of the truth, then apparently related events go a long way and often all the way, to accomplish things never contemplated. Results transpire and yet the possibility of their happening as a consequence never enters into the minds of those connected with the potent factors. If the inducing causes were all planned to happen at the same time, imagination would scarce conceive of the possibility of what does actually happen.

Probably no soil is more fruitful of events really without reason, than the Oriental imagination. Suspicion and insincerity, double dealing and shifting seem to prevail in every dealing of the Oriental, whether it be with an Oriental or with an Occidental. The unspeakable Turk is a character past finding out.

In one of my trips across the Atlantic it was my privilege to be a fellow-passenger with Rev. Dr. George Washburn, who, for more than twenty years was the efficient President of Robert College. He probably above any other man, has done most in educating and preparing for usefulness the youths of those different races, so to call them, who dwell within the bounds of the Turkish Empire, particularly in Turkey-in-Europe, Asia Minor and Greece. During his long residence in Constantinople he could not fail to be an observer of the kaleidoscopic succession of things that transpired about him, and his memory could not fail to be stored with many most interesting incidents. One cannot spend the length of an ocean voyage within the limited bounds of the deck of a steamship, without continually swapping incidents of one's lifetime with





fellow voyagers. Dr. Washburn and I met many times each day on our voyage, and we spent many hours in company with each other. During these hours of fellowship, he filled the time full with most interesting recollections connected with his long stay in the old capital of the Eastern Empire, now for so many centuries in the possession of the Turks. One of these incidents I now relate. I relate it as I recall the story from memory, and if I do not get it accurately it is the fault of my memory, at a distance of many months after our voyage. My interest in the story has also led me from other sources to gather other facts in the historic incident, which I have endeavored to place in their proper places.

The needs of the different races of which I have spoken, had long impressed the American missionaries in the Orient, and these needs impressed by missionaries upon their American friends not only at home but upon those who visited the East, gave birth to the project of an institution for education of the young men of those races.

The Bebek Seminary of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions from about or before the year 1840, had with official permission, been maintained at Constantinople. The Crimean War was ended early in the year 1856 and Mr. Christopher R. Robert, who had been a prosperous merchant in New York then visited Constantinople as a part of the usual tour of the Orient. During his stay in that interesting city he chanced to visit the Bebek Seminary. His visit and inspection created in him an interest in the subject of the education of the Oriental youth. It was not a fleeting interest, for it continued to interest him, until in 1859 he took definite steps towards realizing the project of a college at Constantinople. Rev. Dr. Cyrus Hamlin, who had been for twenty years an instructor in and in charge of the Bebek Seminary was chosen to forward the enterprise, and retired from that work to engage in the new enterprise, and became President of the prospective college. A piece of land for the new college was purchased just out of Constantinople on the European side of the Bosphorus on the high ground above the village called Karu Chesmeh, and Dr. Hamlin started for America to secure funds for the necessary buildings. It was in the sum-



mer of 1860. Our country was then in the throes of the excitement before the Presidential election which issued in the election of Mr. Lincoln, and was succeeded by the Civil War. Proposed contributions were postponed and with the outbreak of the Civil War all present success was impossible. The minds and hearts of the American people from whom aid and sympathy had been expected, were too full of trouble at home to be persuaded to invest in or contribute to even so worthy an object, so far away and so completely away from our country. Mr. Robert was to have been one of many to contribute \$10,000 each. He increased his contribution to \$30,000 and Dr. Hamlin returned to Constantinople to start the enterprise with that which was in hand. Sultan Abdul Medjid from whom favor was hoped, died, and Abdul Aziz succeeded him. A favorite of the new Sultan owned a country house near the prospective college grounds and made known, whether with or without authority is unimportant, that his imperial master would not permit any building whatever to be erected on these grounds. A discovered difficulty in obtaining a supply of water also made the site undesirable, and the project to build there was abandoned.

Then occurred an unexpected event. An officer of the Turkish government was the owner of a fine site which he had previously refused to sell, but now in need of money he was a willing seller. It was a remarkably beautiful hillside on the height of Rumile Hassar, on the banks of the European shore of the Bosphorus, not quite half way from Stamboul to the famed village of Therapia. It was the spot which tradition indicated as the locality where Darius the Persian crossed with his army. Whether this tradition be true or not, it is always pointed out as the place of the crossing of Mohammed II, when he attacked Constantinople from the west side, and it fell, and he obtained the first Turkish lodgment in Europe. But according to Turkish law or custom the building of such an institution would require the consent or firman of the Government. It happened, as we have said, that the owner of this land was an officer in the then administration of the Sultan, and in the department through which only such a firman was to be obtained, and it was made a condition of the purchase of





the land that such firman should accompany the transfer of the title, and this officer was in a position to benefit himself by the sale of the land and the obtaining of the firman. To avoid new difficulties the negotiations were conducted and the contract signed in great secrecy, the price equal to \$8,000 only to be paid when with the payment of the price there should be delivered the official permission to build the college buildings. In due time, but not before several months of characteristic Oriental delay, the purchase was consummated, and coincident with it was delivered the necessary document authorizing the erection of the college buildings.

But as usual the end of difficulties was not yet reached. Laborers were at work, getting out the stone upon the grounds, and excavations were being made for foundations, when a government officer appeared with a statement that work had better be suspended for a short time until certain preliminaries had been arranged. It was another case of Oriental indirectness. That short time lengthened into seven long years.

There was a French Jesuit priest, the Abbe Boré, who had long been in the Orient, where he had been something of about everything, a priest, a soldier, a diplomat, and good at either of these. He had a lynx eye on everything that was Protestant. He had long wanted a hold upon a piece of land for a Jesuit Institute on that beautiful Bosphorus, but that was one of his few failures. He was not long in finding out that the project was for the building of an American Protestant College and he set about at once to thwart this Protestant enterprise. The French embassy, in those days ever quick to protect all Catholic interests in the East was of course at the bidding of the Jesuit, and the Russian ambassador was quick to follow, and both were brought in to help defeat the new enterprise. The French had no such privilege and the Russian could plead the same. It is said that the Grand Vizier and perhaps the Sultan himself was waited upon by the Ambassadors of France and of Russia to protest against the college project for teaching Turkish subjects and others in the English language, and, pretending to mistake, if not really mistaking the language for the country, complained at once, to the Sultan that undue advantage had been given to England by a permission to erect a col-





lege, when no such privilege had been given to either France or Russia. Either they were willing not to understand the true situation or they would not understand that such a concession was made to Americans and not to England. The fact of the English language was made the bugbear. Our country's flag was practically an unknown quantity, and of small account in these Eastern countries. That our country was a great country of itself had not yet impressed anybody in the Orient. The English language seemed to them to mean not more or less than England itself. The Sultan to appease them sought about for a way to do it. He was not disposed to go back on the official permission to build—at least not outwardly. It authorized the building of the institution, and he and his advisers set to work. Failing success in several ways to hurry the matter to an end the only practical oriental way seemed to be the underhand way. First came the warning to suspend work for a short time. Then the Mohammedan residents were apprised in some way of their liberty to destroy the work from time to time as it progressed, or interfere with it, and that they would not be interfered with. Of course the Russian and French representatives were glad to incite just such acts. As ground had been broken and as the work progressed raids were made upon them by the Mohammedan residents in the neighborhood, and the work as done was destroyed. And there are statements, true or untrue, that it was done over again, that it was again destroyed and that this happened time and again until there seemed to be no possible progress to be made. The Sultan either refused to interfere or in fact did not interfere, and has the credit of having abetted the whole lawless acts of destruction. And so work ceased.

But American resourcefulness follows wherever Americans go. It was not so much against the college enterprise as such, that the Jesuit priest and the Russian and French ambassadors were scheming, as it was against a Protestant educational enterprise. The Bebek Missionary Seminary had been located at the village of Bebek not far from the site purchased for the college and on the same side of the Bosphorus. For some reason the building was closed and the Seminary work removed elsewhere to Marsovan. It was the



ambition of Dr. Hamlin to begin, and he proposed to Mr. Robert to rent the building from the American Board and to start the college work. Mr. Robert arranged in America for the occupancy of the building and furnished the money for the necessary repairs and for fitting it for its new uses, and Dr. Hamlin issued his notices for the opening. The wily Jesuit priest was alert and had Dr. Hamlin accused to the Turkish officials of opening the college without the Sultan's permission, and in spite of the practical interdict which he well thought he had secured. As little law and justice as there is in Turkish rule, there seem to be some things higher than the Sultan. What we call in our country "prescription" is called in Turkey "adet," which practically means that when a right has been publicly, openly, exercised for twenty years it cannot be prevented. In practice this prescriptive right is higher than the Sultan himself. Bebek Seminary had been used as a school for more than twenty years, the subsequent interval of cessation of its work for a few years, not being of moment, and the scheme of the priest came to naught, for the Turk could not refuse respect to what was wholly Turkish law, and the right of "adet" devoted that building to education, and the college was opened and its work went on, despite the storming of Abbe Boré, and the protests of the Ambassadors of France and of Russia.

The story of these seven years of waiting is full of interesting incidents, illustrative of the wiles and corruption of Eastern diplomacy, and of Turkish intrigue, but it is too long to tell here and not necessary to the purposes of this paper. It is, however, relevant to the story to state that through the visit to Constantinople of a close friend of Mr. Seward, our Secretary of State at the time, Dr. Hamlin was enabled to place the whole story of the college matter before the Great Secretary, and in consequence thereof Mr. Seward placed the matter in such light before Blacque Bey, the Ottoman Minister at Washington, that Blacque Bey wrote his superior, the Grand Vizier, informing him of the interview and advising him that the matter of the American College had better be adjusted in some way satisfactory to the American end, or it





would become sooner or later, and probably not far off, a more difficult matter to adjust.

A strange coincidence transpired at this time. Admiral Farragut had won renown in the Civil War. His name, like that of Nelson, had gone into history, and notwithstanding that America had not shown her flag on many occasions in Oriental waters, the name of Farragut had become world-renowned. The Sultan and his ministers were not ignorant of that renown. Farragut had been made an Admiral in 1866 and had been assigned to the command of the European squadron. He ought to have had with him his own ship, the Hartford, the same on the decks of which he had won his great name. There would have been a singular fitness if the great sailor-commander and his renowned ship could have gone together, for it was a great time they had everywhere. It was in the early part of 1868 that he visited European waters. His squadron consisted of the new steam frigate, the Franklin, thirty-nine guns, the steam sloop of war Canandaqua, seven guns, and Ticonderoga, nine guns, and the little Frolic, a side-wheeler of five guns, which was a captured blockade runner converted into a naval vessel. His reception in France was a great recognition of his fame. The Empress Eugenie came all the way to Cherbourg to do him honor. He was also the lion in Cronstadt and St. Petersburg and visited Moscow and Central Russia. Sweden and Norway did him honor. He visited England and the soldiers and sailors of Great Britain honored him. In Portugal and Spain their crowned heads did honor to themselves in honoring him. He sailed into the Mediterranean and at Toulon and particularly at Nice, great events greeted him. At Spezia and at Florence, Italy and her king honored him. He visited Malta and returned again to England, where even greater honors were paid him, and the Queen and the Prince of Wales and the Duke of Edinburgh showed him respect and honor. His whole progress was like a triumphal march, and all Europe heard and knew of it. Again he turned into the Mediterranean and sailed to the East, and in the course of his voyage brought up at Dardanelles, near the forts which guard the entrance to the strait of that name, and sent to Constantinople for permission to come up





in his ship to that city. Permission was refused. I have heard that it is said that a second message was sent by the warrior sailor that he intended to come up with his ship anyway, and that come he would, with or without permission, but he wanted the permission. That may, however, be an Oriental exaggeration or invention, but it is quite like other incidents the Turk is familiar with. At all events the mind of the Sultan was changed, and permission was given to come up in the little *Frolic*, and *Farragut* sailed up the Dardanelles, and through the Sea of Marmora, and cast anchor in the Bosphorus off the Golden Horn. His little ship was received with the customary salutes from the shore. But the Americans at Constantinople were insistent that the big flagship, the *Franklin*, should also come up to the city, and application was made again to the Sultan for permission. But it was opposed by the representatives of Russia and France and Germany, who argued that it was contrary to the terms of the Treaty of Paris that so large a vessel should pass the Dardanelles. But it was recalled that an exception had been made and a precedent already established by a like favor to a Russian war ship. The *Alexander Nevsky*, a large frigate, with the Grand Duke Alexis, the son of the Czar, had passed those waters, and for such passage permission had been granted. But the objectors argued that that was for a royal prince. This did not silence the Americans. The American Minister, Mr. Morris, was ready, and claimed that the Admiral was a Prince of the blood, and speaking for his countrymen, that their country was a republic, and that they had no titles there, nor any Grand Dukes or princes in name, but that every citizen was a sovereign and were all of royal blood, of whom there were on the decks of the *Franklin* no less than 700 such princes; that the Admiral, as the Turks well knew, in his recent progress through Europe, had been received and honored in every country as a Prince of the blood, and that the crowned heads of England, Russia, France and Italy had all so honored him. The difficulty vanished and the humor of the situation won, and the *Franklin* sailed up to Constantinople and also cast anchor in the Bosphorus off the Golden Horn, and she, too, was received with salutes from the shore. Events were happening in the East, to make his visit



to Constantinople a matter of great moment. An insurrection in Crete was in progress and much Greek and Cretan blood flowed on that island. The sought-for independence of Crete has always been a nightmare to the Turk, for it surely would mean also the loss of all the Turkish Islands in the Archipelago. Greece has always sympathized with Crete. The Greeks in Constantinople flocked around the Admiral and spread the report that he had promised to stop at Crete as he should sail by its shores. Whether to take off Cretans or Greeks, or to give comfort to the insurgents did not matter. The report was rife and perhaps had its influence in what took place.

Constantinople distinguished itself in the courtesies and fetes that were accorded to the world-renowned Admiral and his ships and the American officers. Among other things a great feast was spread by the Grand Vizier in his honor, to which all the great names then in Constantinople were invited. At the banquet the Grand Vizier sat at the head of the table; upon his right hand was seated the great Admiral, and upon his left the American Minister to the Sublime Porte and around the table were seated the other notables. There were the Ambassadors of France, of Russia, of Germany, of England and Turkish generals and pashas and ministers, and governors, and also the lesser lights. It was intended to be a great occasion and it was one. After the feast had been disposed of, the Grand Vizier rose in his place, and, turning to the American Admiral, and for the ears of all those present, he addressed to him a grandiloquent speech after the Oriental fashion. He expressed the great honor to the great Turk in the visit of the greatest Admiral to the Capital of the Ottoman Empire, and the pleasure it had given to the Sultan, the head of Islam, to welcome the great Admiral, who had been found so worthy as to be honored by all of Europe, and the delight which they had experienced in entertaining him. It is needless to say for the purposes of the story all that the Grand Vizier said. Enough, that he made much of the occasion, much of the Admiral, and overmuch by putting himself and his Turkish Master into the hole of obligation. It became Admiral Farragut to reply to this speech of welcome, which it





is said he did most happily, though in blunt sailor fashion. An interested countryman of the Admiral (and he was glad to meet his countrymen in foreign parts) had told him the story of Robert College, but he said he could do nothing, for his visit was not a diplomatic one in any sense. In view of this banquet it was, however, suggested that he might refer to it in some way in any speech he might there make and put the question why that American College cannot be built. To which it is said the Admiral replied, "Anybody may ask a king a civil question and I am ready to do that," and he was urged not to make reply to anything that should follow, but whoever he should meet of the high Turkish officials to ask the same question. So prepared thus beforehand, after having said the fine things that were necessary in reply to the speech of the Grand Vizier, and having said enough in recognition of the country and the countrymen of the Turkish Sultan, he spoke of his own country and of her prowess in the war recently ended, and united again what her destiny was to be, and then he simply asked, point-blank, the straight question, Why can't that American College be built at Constantinople? I have never heard that he said more. Perhaps more would have spoiled the effect.

There was more than one surprise around that table on that occasion. No one present, not even the American Minister, was a party to the speech, or the potent question of the Admiral. He, as were all others present, was utterly ignorant of any intention of the Admiral to speak those words, and to ask that sharp question. But Ali Pasha, the Grand Vizier, knew that very recently the Ottoman Minister at Washington had communicated to him a message from the American Secretary of State, brim full of meaning, concerning that very matter. The knowledge of the Grand Vizier of the previous communication from the American Government, through the Turkish Minister, led him to couple with it the present visit of the great Admiral and his warship, and according to the custom of European governments to enforce their demands upon the Sultan by sending a warship, and he seemed to have understood that the same practice had now been adopted by the American government, and that the present visit of Admiral Farragut and his



big warship was a like demonstration. It is scarcely necessary to add that the other representatives of foreign governments who had been the bottom cause of the interference with the erection of the college, were also disturbed by what had just taken place, and clearly showed it on their faces as they sat about that table. The occasion and the remarks of Admiral Farragut called for a further speech from the Grand Vizier and he again arose, and after acknowledging the compliments paid to his Turkish master, found it impossible not also to allude to the American College incident, and then proceeded, as we would say, to put his master "into a hole" by an Oriental reply concerning the incident, excusing his master from complicity with the untoward incidents of the past seven years, concerning the American College, and then proceeded in that behalf to disclose what neither the Admiral nor the others around the table knew, the representation of the American Government in the same line so recently communicated to him by the Ottoman Minister at Washington, and he finished his remarks with a promise that the Turkish government would immediately take up the matter, which he claimed involved the honor of the Sultan, and would enforce respect to the firman, and see that so beneficent a project planned by the American people for the benefit of the Sultan's subjects should go forward. To the matter of the building of the American College the Admiral had nothing further to say, but his blunt question remained to trouble the Turk. I ought to say that there is another version of this incident, to the effect that the blunt question of the Admiral was not in his speech, but was before it, and was put to a high Turkish Pasha seated at his right at the table, and in so audible a tone, that many, including the Grand Vizier himself heard it, to his great embarrassment, since he could not immediately reply and in fact every one but the Admiral was embarrassed. It matters not for the effect produced, which version was the true one.

That banquet ended and subsequent festivities continued while the Admiral and his ship remained at Constantinople. The Admiral was feted and toasted. He met the great ones of the Ottoman Government and to each in turn, to the Minister of Foreign Affairs, to the War Minister and to the Min-



ister of the Navy, he again asked the same blunt question, "Why can't that American College be built," until it seemed as though that was the one question to all, and to the explanations of each in turn he had never a word to say, but the question was repeated again and again.

In due time he sailed away. Not long after he had gone, the college authorities were informed by the American Minister that he had received a written communication from the Grand Vizier, that the Sultan had decided that Dr. Hamlin could begin the work on the college buildings as soon as he pleased, and that an *imperial irade* would follow. This was most welcome news, for there was a familiar saying in Constantinople, that Ali Pasha, the Grand Vizier, never broke a written promise and never kept a verbal one. And follow it did, bearing the veritable signature of the Sultan himself, which was almost an unheard of act. No *irade* had ever been asked. That it was granted and the matter disposed of in that way was a mystery. I have often thought that it was quite like the Turk, in order to do a thing he did not want to do, to over-do it. To have done it in any other way would have seemed perhaps like going back on his own subjects, and so it must be done according to the common phrase "so as to save the face of the 'Turk,'" by recognizing the past in no manner, and beginning again. And it was accomplished after this fashion. Within a comparatively short time there was delivered to the President of the College a magnificent document, granted by the Sultan and bearing his own imperial signature, in effect creating Robert College a corporation recognized by the Turkish government, and granting to the corporation and to the American government practical extra territoriality as to all the lands of the college. This was a favor larger than had ever been granted by the Sultan to any organization within his dominion, or to any foreign country. It was an utter defeat to the Jesuit priest and to the Russian and to the French ambassadors in their diplomacy, which they thought was against England. It amounted to more than Robert College had ever asked, and although England, as a sovereignty or as a people was not directly involved, Englishmen could





stand by and smile at the result of the defeat of what was planned to be a defeat to her.

The result of this incident is further very interesting. The beautiful buildings of the college, against his protest called Robert College, after the name of its munificent projector, were in due time erected on that historic ground, where they look down upon the beautiful Bosphorus, and most beautiful sheet of water in Europe, with its daily procession of ships of commerce, and of the food ships of the Black Sea, on their way to help feed Europe. Its corps of professors and teachers have ever since that time been unceasingly engaged in the education in the English language and into Western, and civilized ideas and progress, those races of the subjects of the Sultan, who are not in any sense Turks, and a goodly number of Turks also and some of them of high degree, one of them, a graduate of 1904 and a son of a Dervish, is about commencing a post-graduate course at Columbia University. And curiously enough in Robert College they have been using text books written only in English. But far beyond that, the extra territoriality clause of the last document or concession granted by the Sultan has ever since been respected. The flag of our country flies there as of right. And when any alleged crime is committed in Turkey, and the criminal, as he sometimes does, flees to and secretes himself upon the lands of Robert College, no Turkish soldier or policeman ever sets his foot upon those lands in pursuit of the fugitive, until first an application is made by the Grand Vizier to the American Minister for leave to enter the college grounds, and such application is in turn submitted to the President of Robert College, and if he consents, and only if he consents, the American Minister communicates permission to the Turkish authorities, who then and only with such permisison enter the property in pursuit of their victim.

Robert College, however, is only one of the many anomalies which exist in the Turkish Empire—full of independent governments or independent agencies, international and yet not international, which exercise sovereign powers within that Empire entirely independent of interference or even observance by Turkish authority.



Just to think of a parcel of land, say one hundred acres in extent, on the bank of the Bosphorus, within less than ten miles of Constantinople, in the midst of the Ottoman Empire, being practically and to every intent and purpose an independent country—yes, a patch of soil practically American, within the Turkish dominion, and practically independent of Turkish power.

Almost as often as I have told this story, I have been asked what induced the Sultan to grant such strange and unasked for privileges and rights and immunity as to the lands of Robert College. Anyone who hears or reads this paper is quite as competent as I was to guess the reason. Naturally I did some guessing. The Turkish government authorized by firman the erection of the college buildings. When that work was commenced and he was beset by interfering foreign representatives to recall that permission, the way was not clear to the Sultan. He did not want to offset to it any new concession, and the way out of it, seemed to lie only in the underhand way by inciting the Mohammedan population of that neighborhood to pull down the buildings as they were being built, or to incite the fear that they would do so. When it reached the point of an international complication and the necessity to call them off, the Sultan was up against the proposition of going back on himself and perhaps exposing the hand of his government in secretly authorizing the lawless interference. It certainly was a sharp course to pursue, calling off all future relation to the matter by creating the land in question a part of the realm of another nation, without his own jurisdiction, and hence clear of his responsibility for whatever transpired within its limits, and any act of vandalism or destruction by his own people, would be at their own risk and done where his authority did not reach, and for which he would not have to settle with the Mohammedan mob, who might commit such a trespass. This was a mere guess. Your guess is as valuable as mine. But mine is quite in a line I think with Oriental character and the facts I have stated. How strange seem the circumstances of the visit of Admiral Farragut, without plan or purpose, to have brought about such a situation.





## Publications of the New York Society

1. "THE SETTLEMENT OF NEW YORK," by George Rogers Howell, March 18, 1897.
2. "THE BATTLE OF LEXINGTON," by Hon. John Winslow, May 13, 1897.
3. "GEORGE CLINTON," by Col. R. E. Prime, December 15, 1902.
4. "WASHINGTON, LINCOLN AND GRANT," by Gen James Grant Wilson, April 6, 1903.
5. "EARLY NEW YORK," by Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt, January 15, 1904.
6. "THOMAS HOOKER, THE FIRST AMERICAN DEMOCRAT," by Walter Seth Logan, February 19, 1904.
7. "EARLY LONG ISLAND," by Hon. Wm. Winton Goodrich, March 16, 1904.
8. "BANQUET ADDRESSES," May 13, 1904.
9. "THE PHILIPPINES AND THE FILIPINOS," by Maj. Gen. Fred'k D. Grant, December 10, 1904.
10. "SOME SOCIAL THEORIES OF THE REVOLUTION," by Theodore Gilman, January 31, 1905.
11. "BANQUET ADDRESSES," May 13, 1905.
12. "THE STORY OF THE PEQUOT WAR," by Thos. Egleston, LL. D., Ph. D., December 15, 1905.
13. "DISTINCTIVE TRAITS OF A DUTCHMAN," by Col. John W. Vrooman, February 23, 1906.
14. "AN INCIDENT OF THE ALABAMA CLAIMS ARBITRATION," by Col. Ralph E. Prime, March 23, 1906.
15. "BANQUET ADDRESSES AND MEMOIR OF HON. ROBT. B. ROOSEVELT," May 14, 1906.
16. "CONSTITUTION, BY-LAWS AND REGULATIONS OF THE ORDER, AND LIST OF MEMBERS OF THE GENERAL COURT, WITH BY-LAWS AND LIST OF MEMBERS OF THE NEW YORK SOCIETY," November 1, 1906.
17. "SOME MUNICIPAL PROBLEMS THAT VEXED THE FOUNDERS," by Rev. Wm. Reed Eastman, December 14, 1906.
18. "A VANISHED RACE OF ABORIGINAL FOUNDERS," by Brig. Genl. Henry Stuart Turrill, U. S. A., February 14, 1907.
19. "LIST OF OFFICERS AND MEMBERS OF THE NEW YORK SOCIETY," November 15, 1907.
20. "THE HUDSON VALLEY IN THE REVOLUTION," by Francis Whiting Halsey, December 13, 1907.
21. "AMERICAN TERRITORY IN TURKEY; OR, ADMIRAL FARRAGUT'S VISIT TO CONSTANTINOPLE AND THE EXTRA-TERRITORIALITY OF ROBERT COLLEGE," by Ralph E. Prime, LL. D., D. C. L., February 14, 1908.



Proceedings  
OF THE  
Twelfth Annual Banquet  
OF  
The New York Society of the  
Order of the Founders and  
Patriots of America

Held at the Hotel Manhattan, New York City,  
May 13, 1908, in Honor of the Officers  
of the General Court and in Commem-  
oration of the 301st Anniversary  
of the Founding of Jamestown.





# Officers of the New York Society Order of the Founders and Patriots of America

---

## *Governor*

EDWARD HAGAMAN HALL,  
Tribune Building, New York.

## *Deputy Governor*

GEORGE CLINTON BATCHELLER,  
696 Broadway, New York.

## *Chaplain*

REV. FREDERICK W. CUTLER,  
Yonkers, N. Y.

## *Secretary*

WILLIAM WHITE KNAPP,  
289 Fourth Avenue, New York.

## *Treasurer,*

THEODORE GILMAN,  
55 William Street, New York.

## *State Attorney*

JOHN C. COLEMAN,  
100 Broadway, New York.

## *Registrar*

CLARENCE ETTIENNE LEONARD,  
44 East 23rd Street, New York.

## *Genealogist*

JOHN ELDERKIN,  
Lotus Club, New York.

## *Historian*

WILLIAM EDWARD FITCH, M. D.,  
320 Manhattan Avenue, New York.

## *Councilors*

1906-1909

MAJOR-GEN. FREDERICK D. GRANT, New York.  
HENRY WICKES GOODRICH, New York.  
RICHARD H. ROBERTS, New York.

1907-1910

GEN. STEWART L. WOODFORD, New York.  
THEODORE FITCH, New York.  
COL. HENRY W. SACKETT, New York.

1908-1911

COL. RALPH EARL PRIME, Yonkers, N. Y.  
EDGAR ABEL TURRELL, New York.  
CHARLES W. B. WILKINSON, New York.





## Proceedings of the Twelfth Annual Banquet

---

The Twelfth Annual Banquet of the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America was held in the Hotel Manhattan, at the corner of Madison Avenue and 42nd Street, New York City, Wednesday evening, May 13, 1908, in honor of the officers of the General Court of the Order which had met in the City Hall earlier in the day, and in commemoration of the 301st anniversary of the settlement of Jamestown, Va.

The Committee in charge consisted of the Governor, Edward Hagaman Hall, Chairman, and Associates George Clinton Batcheller, John C. Coleman, Dr. William Edward Fitch, Theodore Fitch, Theodore Gilman, Major General Frederick D. Grant, U. S. A., William W. Knapp, Clarence Ettienne Leonard, Col. Ralph E. Prime, Richard H. Roberts, Col. Henry W. Sackett and Edgar A. Turrell.

At the Speakers' table, besides the Governor of the Society, sat Major General Frederick D. Grant, U. S. A., commanding the Department of the East, former Governor-General of the Order; Rear Admiral Caspar F. Goodrich, U. S. N., commandant of the New York Navy Yard; the latter's aide, Lieutenant William F. Bricker, U. S. N.; Dr. Lyon Gardiner Tyler, President of William and Mary College, Williamsburgh, Va.; Associate Arthur J. Birdseye of Farmington, Conn., Governor of the Connecticut Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America; Lieut. John E. Grote Higgins, President of the Saint George's Society of New York; and Colonel John W. Vrooman, ex-President of the Holland Society of New York.

At the guest tables were seated the following named persons:

|                           |                          |
|---------------------------|--------------------------|
| Mr. George C. Batcheller  | Mr. John Crocker Foote   |
| Mrs. George C. Batcheller | Mr. J. Merrill Foote     |
| Hon. Arthur J. Birdseye   | Mr. Theodore Gilman      |
| Mrs. Arthur J. Birdseye   | Mrs. Edward Hagaman Hall |
| Mr. Goodwin Brown         | Mr. Dudley R. Horton     |
| Hon. John C. Calhoun      | Mrs. Dudley R. Horton    |
| Mr. G. A. Chamberlin      | Mr. Edward F. Johnson    |



|                            |                           |
|----------------------------|---------------------------|
| Mr. John C. Coleman        | Rev. E. P. Johnson        |
| Mrs. John C. Coleman       | Mr. W. W. Knapp           |
| Mr. F. A. Corbin           | Mr. Clarence E. Leonard   |
| Mrs. F. A. Corbin          | Mr. Charles E. Mead       |
| Dr. Condict W. Cutler      | Mr. W. M. Nicoll          |
| Rev. F. W. Cutler          | Mr. Edward Lang Perkins   |
| Mr. Telemon Cuyler         | Miss O'Brien              |
| Rev. Dr. John G. Davenport | Col. Ralph E. Prime       |
| Mr. George E. Dewey        | Mr. Edwin Louis Ripley    |
| Miss Dewey                 | Col. Henry W. Sackett     |
| Mr. Charles E. Fay         | Mrs. Henry W. Sackett     |
| Mrs. Charles E. Fay        | Col. Charles H. Sherrill  |
| Mrs. Edwin R. Fay          | Mr. Joseph B. Tiffany     |
| Mr. Walter C. Faxon        | Dr. W. S. Wadsworth       |
| Mrs. Walter C. Faxon       | Mr. Charles Munson Walker |
| Mr. Faxon's guest          | Gen. Stewart L. Woodford  |
| Mr. Theodore Fitch         | Mrs. Stewart L. Woodford  |
| Dr. W. E. Fitch            | Dr. J. H. Woodward        |
| Rev. Joseph F. Folsom      | Mr. C. W. B. Wilkinson    |

The outgoing Governor-General of the Order, Admiral George Dewey, was unable to be present, as on former occasions, and sent the following letter:

#### NAVY DEPARTMENT

OFFICE OF  
THE ADMIRAL OF THE NAVY  
Mills Building  
WASHINGTON

April 4, 1908.

Edward Hagaman Hall, Esq.,  
Tribune Building,  
New York City.

Dear Mr. Hall:

It is with much regret that I am compelled to decline the very cordial invitation of the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America to their meeting and dinner on the thirteenth of May next in New York City; but the state of my health this past winter has not been very good, and I found it wise not to participate in any entertainments whatsoever, especially those involving travel, and that if I wish to preserve my health I must forego much pleasure.

Again assuring you of my deep regret, I am

Very truly yours,

GEORGE DEWEY.





The Hon. Rollin S. Woodruff, Governor of the State of Connecticut, who had been elected Admiral Dewey's successor as Governor General of the Order, was unable to be present and respond to the toast to New England on account of being present at the conference of Governors of all the States at the White House, in Washington, D. C., to consider the subject of the Conservation of Natural Resources.

#### RECEPTION OF COLORS

At 7.40 p. m. the Governor rapped his gavel for silence and said, in the form of the General Regulations:

"Associates, let us receive the colors."

The company then rose and remained standing, while Associates John C. Coleman and William Edward Fitch brought in the Flag of the United States and the Standard of the Order and placed them at the ends of the speakers' table.

#### INVOCATION BY REV. JOSEPH FULFORD FOLSOM

**THE GOVERNOR:** You will please remain standing, while the Rev. Joseph Fulford Folsom, Chaplain General of the Order, invokes the divine blessing.

Chaplain-General Folsom then made the invocation, and the company resumed their seats.

#### INSTALLATION OF GENERAL OFFICERS

**THE GOVERNOR:** The installation of the Officers of the General Court elected this afternoon having been postponed until this evening, I will request Past Governor General Ralph E. Prime to act as Installing Officer.

**INSTALLING OFFICER PRIME:** Associates, you will please come forward as your names are called:

Governor-General, the Hon. Rollin Simmons Woodruff, of Connecticut (absent).

Deputy Governor-General, Gen. Edward Franc Jones, of New York (absent).

Chaplain-General, Rev. Joseph F. Folsom, of New Jersey (present).

Secretary-General, Clarence Ettienne Leonard, of New York (present).



Treasurer-General, William Alexander Newman Dorland, M. D., of Pennsylvania (absent).

Attorney-General, Robert Hewes Hinckley, of Pennsylvania (absent).

Registrar-General, William Edward Fitch, M. D., of New York (present).

Genealogist-General, George Franklin Newcomb, of Connecticut (absent).

Historian-General, William White Knapp, of New York (present).

Councillors-General, George Edward Scranton, of Pennsylvania (absent); Judge James Albert Betts, of New York (absent); Edwin Louis Ripley, of Connecticut (present).

In response to the call, Associates Folsom, Leonard, Fitch, Knapp and Ripley presented themselves for installation.

**INSTALLING OFFICER PRIME:** Associates, raise your right hands. You do each of you solemnly make pledge to support and maintain the Constitution, By-laws, Rules and Regulations of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America and to discharge to the best of your ability the duties of the office to which each of you respectively has been elected.

**ALL:** I do.

**INSTALLING OFFICER PRIME:** It is your duty, Associates, also to file with the Secretary-General a written pledge to the same effect as that which you have here made orally.

Dinner was then served.

#### ADDRESS BY GOVERNOR EDWARD HAGAMAN HALL

After the coffee, the Governor called the company to order and spoke as follows:

*Ladies and Gentlemen:*

As Shakespeare says in "The Tempest";

"The hour's now come.  
The very minute bids thee ope thine ear."

The physical feast has been served; the intellectual feast is about to be administered. It is to be hoped,—and from outward evidences I think we may believe,—that the former has



performed its valuable and necessary function as a preparation for the latter; that the demands of the inner man have been satisfied; that your nerves have been soothed; and that you are now in that comfortable frame of mind which will make you duly receptive to the great truths which you are to hear expounded from this platform.

And as I look upon the calm and benignant countenances of my distinguished colleagues on this side of the long table, and discern in every lineament the hardly restrained eloquence that presses for utterance, I feel that here too the psychological moment has arrived. Truly "the very minute bids thee ope thine ear," for, to quote the words of another, "Out of the fullness of the mouth, the heart speaketh!"

As one looks at the seven-fold list of speakers, one is impressed at once with the symbolism of numbers, and but that your toastmaster is included among them, he might liken the approaching exercises to the setting forth of the seven-branched candle-stick for the spiritual illumination of the feast. Ruskin might liken them to the Seven Lamps of Oratorical Architecture (with the frieze omitted, we trust); while Herschel, Shakespeare or Hammerstein would doubtless set them forth in the similitude of the Seven Stars, now about to illuminate the firmament. In the light of the latter figure, we are reminded of one of the numerous conundrums of Job, the most patient man in history, who inquired: "Canst thou bind the sweet influences of the Seven Stars?" With reference to the present occasion, my answer to Job is, that I have the power and the desire to "bind the sweet influences" of only one of the Seven Stars, that of the smallest magnitude, which will struggle to emit its rays first.

The stars which are to follow are suns of the first magnitude,—not moons, as our distinguished fellow citizen, Judge Henry E. Howland, once presented a number of speakers, on the ground that "the fuller they became the brighter they grew." It is a rare galaxy which includes the sons of two Presidents of the United States—President Grant and President Tyler; a Rear Admiral of the United States Navy; the Presidents of the two distinguished Societies which cherish respectively the memories of the two wonderful countries from which we





have inherited the fundamental stock and traditions of our great nation; and which would also include the Governor of the State of Connecticut if he had not been detained by the important conference of Governors at the White House in Washington to consider the conservation of the natural resources of the country. We are fortunate, however, in having Governor Woodruff's place supplied by one of his most loyal supporters in the Connecticut Legislature, the Hon. Arthur J. Birdseye, who is Governor of our Society of Founders and Patriots in Connecticut.

There are two reasons why these gentlemen have come here to speak and you to listen. One is to commemorate the 301st anniversary of the settlement of Jamestown and the first permanent planting of Anglo-Saxon civilization in the New World. The other is to honor the Officers of the General Court of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America, an organization formed of those who, through the direct line of the father or the mother's father, have descended from ancestors who settled in the territory of the present United States within fifty years of the settlement of Jamestown, and whose intermediate ancestors in the same line at the time of the War for Independence were loyal to the cause of the Colonies.

Officers of the General Court, in the name of the New York Society of the Order, I bid you and your colleagues a cordial welcome, and I congratulate the Order upon the wisdom with which the General Court has this day chosen its officers. Governor Woodruff is the seventh of a distinguished line of incumbents of the office of Governor-General, his predecessors having been Major-General Frederick D. Grant, U. S. A.; General Stewart L. Woodford, former Lieutenant Governor of this State and our Minister to Spain prior to the Spanish-American War; the late Hon. William Winton Goodrich, presiding Justice of the Appellate Division of the Supreme Court; General Ralph E. Prime; the late Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt (uncle of the President of the United States), and Admiral George Dewey, U. S. N. Admiral Dewey has held the office twice for two terms each, with a brief interval between, and has now been relieved in obedience to the rule of the Order,



with a regret made bearable only by the distinguished choice of his successor.

The limitations on eligibility must always make our membership small in number; and yet there is a place for us to occupy and a duty for us to perform in this country of ours which has grown so wonderfully in the 301 years which have elapsed this day since Anglo-Saxon homes were first permanently built on this side of the Atlantic. When we contemplate that the number of sea-pilgrims who come annually to these shores has increased from the little company of 105 in 1607 to over a million and a quarter in the single year of 1907; when we consider that of this enormous flood which is pouring in upon us 70 per cent come from Austria-Hungary, Italy and Russia; that over one-third of the population of the United States is to-day foreign born or of foreign parentage; that over one-half of the population of New York City, and of States like Connecticut on one side of us and New Jersey on the other is either foreign born or has one or both parents of foreign birth;—we are confronted by a problem of assimilation which would be appalling if we did not have faith that a little leaven can leaven a large lump.

If our legislators can find no just and equitable method of lessening this inpouring of the children of foreign countries, with racial temperament, language, customs, traditions, and ideas born of generations of environment unlike those of the founders of these United States, then as American patriots, as inheritors of the faith of our fathers, as lovers of the institutions which they came here to found, we must protect those institutions from submergence by educating those who come to us from abroad. Education, education, education should be our watch-word. Every power in us should be exercised by ourselves and brought to bear upon our municipal authorities to provide adequate educational facilities for both children and adults. It may seem strange to some of our visitors from out of town who are here this evening for me to imply that the educational facilities provided in these United States are inadequate. I do not know the proportion of provision made for education elsewhere, but I do know that here in this great and wealthy City of New York in which we have so much to take



pride and do take pride, we have our short-comings. It is true we have a splendid educational system; we are the only city in the world in which the child can be educated free, from the kindergarten to and through college—a college whose superb cluster of new buildings is to be dedicated to-morrow. It is true that the Board of Education has a magnificent system of free public lectures at night for adults past school age. This free University of the People, in whose work it has been my pleasure for some years to participate, had an aggregate attendance during the season just closed of more than a million and a quarter. But with all this splendid educational provision, it is a mortification to admit that here, at the very gateway of the Continent where public schools are most needed, our school-houses are so inadequate that during the current season, no less than 70,000 pupils could be given only part-time education,—70,000 children being brought up in compulsory semi-illiteracy! To remedy such conditions here, and elsewhere if they exist elsewhere, it is the duty of every patriot to raise his voice and wield his pen for our country's sake.

It was only ten years ago that the citizens of Barcelona were stoning the statue of Columbus because he had discovered America. It was only 121 years ago that European savants, with a cooler cynicism, were seriously asking the question whether the discovery of America had been a blessing or a curse to mankind. In 1787, Abbe Raynal proposed to the French Academy the offer of a prize of fifty louis for the best essay on that very question, suggesting that the discussion include the consideration of the best method of increasing the benefits and decreasing the ills. In the same year, Abbe Gentry published an elaborate essay on "The Influence of the Discovery of America Upon the Happiness of the Human Race," in which he solemnly concluded that it was all bad except the introduction of quinine from America for subduing fever in Europe. When the Marquis de Chastellux, who had served in the Continental army in America, exclaimed in his essay in the Academy competition: "O land of Washington and Franklin, of Hancock and Adams, who could ever wish thee non-existent for thee or for us?" Baron Grimm replied:





"Perhaps he will wish it who reflects that the Independence of the United States has cost France nearly 2,000,000,000 francs and is hastening in Europe a revolutionary outbreak which had better be postponed or averted."

Nearly a century and a quarter of national growth since Abbe Raynal propounded his pessimistic question has given him his answer. The unsolved problems which he and others contemplated with alarm in that historic year in which we adopted our Federal Constitution but which we have solved since then were far greater than this problem of assimilating our foreign population which confronts us to-day. Therefore I am no pessimist.

An optimist has recently been defined as a man who sees the doughnut, while the pessimist is the man who sees only the hole in the doughnut. In one of our public schools recently, a pupil defined an optimist as a man who looks into your eyes; and a pessimist as a man who examines your feet.

Now I am an optimist. I am willing to look the situation in the eye with no fear for the future. To-day, the United States Senate voted in concurrence with the House of Representatives to restore to our national coinage a motto of optimism,—“In God we trust,”—a motto which, while temporarily absent from our coinage, has never been absent from the hearts of those on whom the safety and perpetuity of our country depends.\*

On this memorable anniversary, let us take fresh inspiration from the past and courage for the future. Let us renew our determination, to do, in our day, our share to make sure and lasting the civilization founded by our fathers 301 years ago this day, so that so long as years shall roll, all nations that on earth do dwell, in boundless continent or wave-washed isle of the sea, from Arctic ice to tropic palm, shall sing with one accord the grateful refrain:

O land of Washington and Franklin, of Hancock and Adams, may thou ever exist, for thee and for us.

\*A few months previously, the President of the United States had directed that the motto “In God We Trust” be omitted from the gold coinage on the ground that it was not authorized by law. On May 18, 1908, the President signed the bill passed by Congress directing that the motto be placed on the gold and silver coins, and it became effective thirty days later.



## THE GOVERNOR

After a brief interval the Governor continued as follows:

While the first regular toast on the programme suggests those ever memorable—and memorized—opening words of the Aeneid, “Arma virumque cano,” the speaker who is to respond to it suggests that epic of another classic language which deals with the adventures of the wandering son of Ulysses. General Grant’s official duties keep him so actively on the move, that we are particularly fortunate that his engagements permit him to be here to-night. At the time of our dinner a year ago, he was co-operating most effectively in the celebration of the Jamestown Ter-Centenary in personal command of the troops at Hampton Roads. He comes to us this evening in a three-fold capacity. By the majority of this company, he is held in warm affection as a true and tried personal friend. By the members of the Order of Founders and Patriots of America, he is honored as an Associate and the first Governor-General of the Order. By all of us, he is held in high esteem as a Major-General of the United States Army and Commander of the Department of the East. In the latter capacity, his headquarters are most appropriately located, for we all know that Governor’s Island was named a good many years ago in anticipation of its becoming the residence of our Governor-General! I can not properly present General Grant as one of the stars of the evening; for since he made that dash to sea just ten years ago in the Spanish War, his brilliant services in Porto Rico, in the Philippines where his district was the first to be made ready for civil government, and subsequently in various onerous commands in this country, have placed upon his collar the two stars of a Major-General, so that he is now a whole constellation. I take great pleasure in presenting General Grant,\* to speak upon the subject of “The Army.”

\* General Frederick Dent Grant, the son of President Ulysses S. Grant and Julia Dent Grant, was born in St. Louis, May 30, 1850; was with his father in the Civil War; was in six battles and at the siege of Vicksburg; was wounded at Black River; graduated from West Point 1871, and commissioned 2d Lieutenant, 4th Cavalry; 1st Lieutenant 1876; Lieutenant-Colonel and aide to Gen. Sheridan 1873-1881, serving on the frontier; resigned 1881; U. S. Minister to Austria, 1889-1893; Police Commissioner of New York, 1894-1897; in war with Spain; Colonel 14th N. Y. Vols., 1898;



## MAJOR-GENERAL FREDERICK D. GRANT, U. S. A.

*Mr. Governor and Honored Guests:* I feel somewhat embarrassed, owing to the flattering and witty remarks of the Governor and Toast Master in reference to myself and my record. However, having a subject that is new and one that none of you ever heard of before, I presume that I can go on, in the language of the Toast Master, on "Education! Education! Education!" He spoke of the motto that has recently been left off but soon to be replaced on the coinage, "In God We Trust." I think that has been the motto of the American people with reference to the army. They have been trusting a great deal in God, and so far the Lord has favored them. I don't know how long that will last; but there is no people in the world that is so pugnacious as the American and yet so illy prepared to meet the consequences, at least that takes so little care to meet them. I take back that "illy prepared," because we are more thoroughly prepared than most citizens know. The army is not only prepared to communicate its efficiency to additional numbers, but in very ready and quick time.

Your love has come very much from the army as from the civil war and has been very worthily bestowed upon one of our branches,—because I look upon the navy as a part of the army,—and if the people of the United States do not love us, let them love our brethren. The navy is increasing more rapidly than the army. I am glad of it, but still even one-half as fast as it ought to grow is better than not to grow at all. I will not say anything more about the navy, but leave that question to my colleague.

Now, the object of the army is one that most people do not realize. I have been to a good many of those large Peace Conferences, and the awful talk that I have heard at most of

promoted to Brigadier-General of Volunteers, 1898; Brigadier-General U. S. A., 1901; Major-General, U. S. A., 1906; served in Porto Rico one year; after war commanded military district of San Juan; held various responsible commands in the Philippines 1899-1902; returned to United States and commanded the Department of Texas, 1902-1904; Department of the Lakes, January to September, 1904; and the Department of the East from 1904 to the present time. He was Governor-General of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America in 1896 and 1897.





them makes me sick. I am sorry it does not make every American citizen sick. I remember being at one, I think it was the Peace Conference where General Woodford was listening, not talking; but he was there and there was a great deal of talk about the uselessness of the army; fighting men were bad things to have, and the army ought not to be in existence. But when I looked at General Woodford and thought of what a row he got us into with Spain, I thought that would be a good answer right away for the use of the army. The army is not an instrument to make war; it is an instrument to get you out of trouble when your statesmen and diplomats get you in.\*

Now in our army the enlisted strength to-day is about 57,500 men. Of that number about 15,000 are abroad, leaving at home some 42,000 soldiers altogether. Those 42,000 are really scholars. They do military work and they do guard service, but their full time is given to practice and study to fit them for a place higher than that of a private soldier. Every private soldier is instructed to fit in as an officer of the junior rank in the line.

We have a great deal of technical work, but unfortunately, we train our technical soldiers so well that just as soon as we give them one term of enlistment they become so valuable that wealthy corporations employ them and they get into your electric companies, railroad companies, trolley companies and all that. A short time ago I assigned a prisoner I had at Governor's Island to fix up my telephone. I have about thirty telephones over there so that we can communicate back and forth to the city, besides my local telephones that belong to the Government entirely. My prisoner had eighteen months to serve, and after he had been with the sergeant about seven or eight months he fixed these telephones and the Telephone Company sent over word that they would like very much to have that man, and they actually offered him bigger pay than the officer who taught him, if I would let him go. I took the

\* General Stewart L. Woodford, United States Minister to Spain at the time of the outbreak of the war with Spain, sat a short distance from General Grant and took his friend's good-natured badinage in the same spirit in which it was given.



the matter into consideration and let the man go. Possibly he is now a wealthy New York citizen, possibly a politician or a statesman. Anyhow, my prisoner learned enough to beat the income of my own son, who spent four years at West Point, graduated at the head of his class, was three years at the head of the army in the Philippines and is now on an \$8,000,000 job up in the Boston Harbor. Financially, it pays better to be with the peace people than it does with the warriors.

I am just now preparing a lot of manoeuvres for the army camp. I am not going into detail about the army, fly the eagle, pull his tail, etc. It is a little hard to give a talk on a subject I have had once a week for four years and not repeat what I said before, and the only new things I have are the manoeuvres. I am preparing sea coast manoeuvres to show how guns can knock out the guns of any foreign fleet if General Woodford gets us into any row with a big power, say like Switzerland. It will give us a safe place to get behind until the navy sends the foreign fleet. I have six manoeuvre camps on hand; that is, I am preparing one in Baltimore, one in the Southern District of New York, that is the lower Bay, to see how people could get in there, or how we could knock them out; then one in the Sound, at Ft. Schuyler, Ft. Totten, New London, Newport, Narragansett Bay and finally Boston. I concentrate the troops from other stations there, and then I get in all the militiamen the states will supply me with and put them into the reserves and try in every possible way to surprise that fort by land and sea. These problems will be worked out with one or two officers, beginning the 20th of this month and ending the 15th of next month. That takes in a lot of militiamen and we are training them for several things. One aim is to develop the Quartermaster service. I send one here, one to Boston, one to Connecticut and another to Pennsylvania to collect together the Quartermasters of those organizations who know how to do the Quartermaster's work, and on going to these places they are told what they have to do; then the Commissaries are instructed and they do the actual work under the supervision of the officers that I detail, preparing the camp so as to make it sanitary, getting in water supplies, etc., and they get that much instruction, each one



having to do what he should do to get his troops into the field, but under the supervision of the officer, so it will not cost the Government anything. The medical department is trained in the same way. They are trained in the actual military action. They stand against blind cartridges instead of bullets, still they get used to the sound and it gives the young officers an idea of what operations would probably be. Then we also have small boats that carry targets that run off at night and which have to be picked up by search-lights. We train those militiamen in that kind of work.

Now I collect together a fleet as though I were going on a little advance movement. For instance, I am concentrating all the mobile troops near Watertown, at a place called Pine Plains. I will land, and everything is to be established there from the supply of water, roads, and everything for a whole summer carried there. Now, some of my troops start from Ft. Meyer, Washington Barracks, Buffalo, Oswego, Sackett Harbor, Plattsburgh Barracks, Ethan Allen and here in New York Harbor. That is, of course, a very much greater scope than I can give to the militiamen, but I give them the direction of the lines where they can march, and while I will have a list of where they are expected to march, I shall not give them that direction, but tell them where they are to be on a certain day, and feel sure they will all arrive on the same day and I am trying to believe they are going to do it within three hours of each other.

There has never before been so wide a scheme of marching troops, from 18 to 450 miles, and have them all arrive together in one place. The only variation, and that would be to hasten the preparation of the camp, would be that I may have to send some troops to prepare the ground, because on the following day the Regulars will have their drills and manoeuvres, and from that time on gradually progress from the open order company drill to the evolutions supposed to mask the march of a vast army; that being the last phase, when they form a curtain. Of course the army will have to be imaginary, but all those soldiers will be a curtain of the army descending and they covering it so it will be impossible, as near as we can make it impossible, for any outsider to get any information





from the inside; and that of course is the highest we can get for the private soldier.

Then we take the officers on what we call military rights; the military right being where you plan out an action for a large body of men (of course the men on both sides are imaginary), each officer has his certain duty to assign them and the plan of battle is made by the instructor, and then the opposition that could be expected under the supposition that they started out; then the officers will meet in front of the troops and see what is to be done in meeting that proposition. Then the whole thing is summed up and the officer's ability rated to see what he can do under command, and a sort of instruction to see what all the officers could do in command if they had to have it; and while of course comparatively few display any great ability, yet the trying out of these men will give us a few officers to rely upon in case General Woodford gets us into any more trouble with a stronger power than Spain.

I have talked a little differently from what I intended to. I thought of a good deal to say in reference to the army, but you have been so good in listening that I kept on the new line and am sure that none of you ever heard the talk I have given you to-night, as this has all come up lately. I want to thank you for listening to me, but I want to tell you how much you missed in not hearing the speech I started out to give you.

When I came into the room, Colonel Prime kept talking to me about the Civil War, and this happens to be the anniversary of the battle of Raymond, which was the second last battle I participated in myself and at that time thought I won. To-morrow will be the anniversary of the battle of Jackson, Miss., which was the next one after Raymond, and at which I participated; the division under General Tuttle went to the left and I went back to Jackson by myself. When Jackson heard I was in the enemy retreated, so that kept Jackson, and my father did not get in for two and one-half hours after I did. I was going to run along on that line to tell you about the army and what I did to save the country and win the Vicksburg campaign, and while you all may smile about it, I *was* in the Vicksburg campaign. I was wounded twice in that



campaign. The soldiers petted me up very much, but I do not know of any one who should have had more attention than I had, and I felt that I was very important at that time. I have very pleasant memories of the navy on that occasion, Admiral Goodrich, and of your old commander Admiral Porter.

I am only saying this as a part of what I intended to say, but I want you to appreciate how much you have lost.

#### THE GOVERNOR

General Grant has had his little joke at the expense of our distinguished Associate General Woodford, who sits before him; and I only regret that I have given my solemn pledge not to call on General Woodford, who has to meet many demands upon his voice and strength as President of the League formed to secure the nomination of Governor Hughes for President of the United States; otherwise, General Grant might receive a Roland for his Oliver. Once upon a time, a pious man, who by some mistake had taken up his residence in Chicago, was asked where his home was. He replied: "My home is in Heaven, but I am staying temporarily in Chicago." The home of our next speaker is in Connecticut, but he is residing temporarily in New York. He is a veteran of two wars; and since he was on the Macedonian in 1864 in that exciting chase after the Confederate steamers Florida and Tallahassee, he has trodden the deck of about every ship of importance in the United States Navy. After forty-four years of distinguished service, he has attained his highest honors and incurred his heaviest responsibilities as Commandant of the New York Navy Yard. But with his armor belt in the right place, he is fearlessly meeting the demands of metropolitan hospitality and manfully maintaining the best social as well as naval traditions of the service. The many appropriate subjects upon which Admiral Goodrich is qualified to speak on an occasion like this present an *embarras de richesses*. Having served on the "Jamestown," he might properly speak on the settlement of the English in Virginia in 1607; on the other hand, having served on the "Puritan," he is eminently qualified to speak on the settlement of New England. From his service on the "Concord," we were tempted to ask him to speak on "Peace"



at the risk of giving General Grant that "sick feeling" to which he has referred, but when we remembered his services in the War College, we were inclined to ask him to speak on "War." From his service in the Civil and Spanish Wars we knew he was good for a fight; while from his services on the "Frolic" he knew that he was "ready for either a fight or a frolic," to quote Admiral Evans' words with reference to the present cruise of the fleet around the world. We finally decided, however, to ask him to speak on the Influence of the Navy on our National History. He who took his place in the "Constellation" many years ago and who has since won his Rear Admiral's Star, brings with him a brilliant record in the service of his country for which we are glad on this occasion to offer him the tribute of our grateful respect. Ladies and gentlemen, Rear Admiral Goodrich.\*

#### REAR-ADMIRAL CASPAR F. GOODRICH, U. S. N.

*Ladies and Gentlemen:* In asking me to speak on the relation of the navy to the history of our country, your distinguished Governor hardly realized, I fear, the difficulty of the task his courtesy has imposed upon me. It should have devolved upon some professor of history, rather than on a naval officer whose views may not be free from partiality. Pray do not believe me insensible to this and other limitations on my part.

The navy is an instrument by which peace is secured or the national honor maintained. It is not an end in itself, so that

\* Rear-Admiral Caspar F. Goodrich, U. S. N., was born in Philadelphia January 7, 1847; appointed to the Naval Academy from Connecticut in 1861 and graduated in 1864. In 1864 was attached to the Macedonian in pursuit of the Florida and Tallahassee. Promoted to Ensign, 1866; Master, 1866; Lieutenant, 1868; Lieutenant Commander, 1869; Commander, 1884; Captain, 1897; Rear-Admiral, 1904. Served on Colorado, 1865-1867; Frolic, 1867-1868; Portsmouth and Lancaster, 1869-1871; in the Naval Academy, 1871-1874; on the Tennessee, 1875-1876; Kearsarge, 1876-1877; at the Torpedo Station, 1878-1880; Lancaster, 1881-1884; Greeley Relief Ship Alert, 1884; Torpedo Board, 1884-1885; Ordnance and Torpedo Service, 1885-1889; commanded successively Jamestown, Constellation and Concord to 1894; president of Naval War College, 1897-1898; commanded St. Louis and Newark during Spanish War; since which time he has commanded the Iowa, Richmond, Minneapolis and Puritan; the League Island Navy Yard and the Portsmouth Navy Yard; was Commander-in-Chief of the Pacific Squadron in 1905-1906 and has been commandant of the New York Navy Yard since June 1, 1907. His home is in Pomfret, Conn.





if by any other means the objects of its existence could be equally well assured, it might be dispensed with immediately and entirely. However possible such a consummation may prove to be in the future, the chronicles of the past have, on more occasions than one, demonstrated that the welfare and integrity of our broad land have in no small measure hung upon the possession of an adequate floating defence. Mine is not the vision of the prophet, so that I am unable to foretell the astounding happenings of the days to come; but, at least, I can ask your brief consideration of certain by-gone events, which, it seems to me, carry their own lesson written in unmistakable terms.

In a general sense, the size and condition of the navy have reflected the interest which our people have taken in concerns of world-wide importance. Consequently, our naval force has waxed and waned in proportion to the number of trade affiliations and the pressure of international politics. There have been times in our history when a few more ships would have materially altered the current of the world's affairs. This statement is particularly true of the American Revolution. The annals of that struggle have not as yet been written from the naval standpoint, so that the majority of our fellow citizens are ignorant of the influence which naval supremacy exercised on the development of events. The evacuation of Boston, on the 17th of March, 1776, was brought about, not so much through the military operations of the little Continental Army, as by the difficulties which the British experienced in supplying their troops in the besieged city, so great was the activity of the small vessels fitted out by General Washington in his capacity as commander-in-chief. These craft intercepted General Gage's transports, ammunition carriers and supply vessels to such an extent as to seriously embarrass him and render his plans abortive. It was a proper strategic move on the part of the British to shift their point of attack to New York (as they did a few months later), but there can be no doubt that they were greatly helped to a just appreciation of the military situation through the schooners and other small vessels commanded by Manly, Broughton, Selwyn and others, whose names occur to you at once. Sir Henry Clinton's re-



treat from Philadelphia in 1778 was similarly the result of a naval demonstration, in this case on the part of our allies, the French, whose fleet under Count d'Estaing had appeared off the Capes of the Delaware. A year later Rhode Island was precipitately abandoned by the British for a like cause. Let us not forget our indebtedness to Benedict Arnold whose flotilla on Lake Champlain completely frustrated Burgoyne's first movement towards New York.

The final campaign of the war resulted in complete success to our arms because Washington's prayers for a superiority of naval force were granted, if only temporarily. The fleet under DeGrasse made possible the complete shutting in of the unfortunate Cornwallis at Yorktown, whose surrender practically, if not chronologically, ended the war.

I need hardly remind you of the preliminary schooling which our naval officers underwent in their numerous, if not always conclusive, affairs with the Barbary Pirates. The value of this preparation cannot be over-estimated.

The intimate connection between an adequate naval force properly handled and our own military successes was again illustrated in the war of 1812. You can do nothing more agreeable and edifying than read the history of this struggle, which is so well told by Captain Mahan. His searching analysis makes clear to the most reluctant this fundamental fact in our history.

The years succeeding the treaty of Ghent are marked by practically universal peace among maritime nations. Our own little navy of those days followed the illustrious example of the pioneers on land and was largely employed in exploring heretofore unvisited parts of the earth's surface and in widening and expanding the horizon of human knowledge. The chronicles of those days are unmarked by sanguinary battles, but rather by conquests over the forces of nature and the cultivation of friendly relations with other peoples.

It did good service during the war with Mexico and on the west coast of Africa in suppressing that unspeakable iniquity, the slave trade, tasks in reasonably fair proportion to its strength. I wonder whether any of my hearers recognize the words Qualla-Baloo, or appreciate the influence of this little



affair in maintaining the prestige of the American name in the far east.

To speak of Matthew Calbraith Perry and his opening the gates of the empire of the Rising Sun, that the forces of modern civilization might enter and control, is to repeat a twice told tale. How momentous are the results of his splendid diplomacy.

During those terrible years from '61 to '65, when brother was arrayed against brother in that unfortunate, regrettable and yet apparently inevitable conflict, the navy expanded along the lines of necessity and did its work thoroughly and well. When the gates of the Temple of Janus were again shut, it shrank back into its former modest dimensions and served for several decades as a school for the instruction of those who some day might be called upon again to unsheath the sword in their country's name.

It was gradually recognized that no nation can live to itself alone and that in order to deal with other powers on a footing of equality, it was necessary to build up an adequate naval force. Thus it was that the navy was found large enough and strong enough in the war with Spain to do that which was exacted of it. The broadening of the political horizon which began in '98 has been accompanied by a steady increase in the number and power of our battle-ships and the end is not yet. As we look back over the history of our country, we find that the navy has grown with the necessity and has decreased when that necessity has passed. Upon these facts we may safely base our predictions for the future.

It is certainly agreeable to one who represents the naval service to feel, as he scans the pages of its history, that at all times and in all places it has responded to the demands made upon it, promptly, vigorously and effectively.

In peace it has strengthened international friendship, surveyed our coasts and the ocean beds suited for telegraphic cables, has policed remote seas and pushed the flag far along on its path to the poles. In war it has done its work to the best of its ability. As a school of loyalty it is unrivalled. How many of you know that even in the terrible straits which naval officers of southern birth found themselves at the out-





break of the civil war, not knowing where their duty lay, not an instance of treason on their part can be cited. In every case, if employed, they handed over to the authorities appointed for that purpose their ships or the stores committed to their charge, resigned their commissions and returned to their homes. It was as free men that they drew their swords on the side which regretfully, yet honestly, they believed to be just. Do you know a more splendid proof of esprit de corps? And can you marvel at the pride with which I regard the service in which I have passed the greater part of my life? Ladies and gentlemen, do you not share in my pride?

### THE GOVERNOR

Admiral Goodrich, I think that the enthusiastic applause which you have just received gives an unmistakable answer to your concluding inquiry. To speak for the Jamestown Pioneers, we are very fortunate to have with us the son of another President of the United States, himself the President of the next to the oldest college in the United States.\* William and Mary College of Williamsburgh, Va., would have ante-dated Harvard if it had not been for the tragic vicissitudes which beset the life of the Jamestown pioneers; for, if I remember rightly, it was projected at Jamestown but was interrupted by the Indian massacre in 1622. Thus, while the Virginia settlers were making their heroic struggle for existence on Jamestown peninsula, Harvard was founded in 1636 and secured the primacy. As soon, however, as the ancient capital was removed from its almost prohibitive situation at Jamestown, to Williamsburgh, William and Mary was founded in 1693 and for

\* President Lyon Gardiner Tyler, of William and Mary College, has been at the head of that institution since 1888. He was born in Charles City County, Va., in August, 1853, and is the son of John Tyler, tenth President of the United States. He graduated in 1875 from the University of Virginia, with his M. A., receiving the degree of LL. D. from Trinity College in 1895. In 1877-1888 he was Professor of Belles Lettres in William and Mary College; in 1878-1882, principal of a high school in Memphis, Tenn.; from 1882 to 1888 practiced law in Richmond, Va.; was member of the Virginia House of Delegates in 1887; and has been a member of the State Board of Education since 1903. He is the author and editor of many historical works, including "The Cradle of the Republic," dealing with Jamestown. He is also editor and owner of the William and Mary College Quarterly Historical Magazine.



215 years has been sending forth her sons, some to become Presidents of the United States, and all to become men of influence in their various walks of life. President Tyler has made a particular study of Jamestown, historically and archaeologically, and I know of no scholar better prepared to speak on the cardinal event the anniversary of which we celebrate this evening. I have the honor to introduce President Tyler.

REV. LYON GARDINER TYLER, M. A., LL. D.

*Ladies and Gentlemen:* Our excellent toastmaster has referred to the presence here to-night of two sons of Presidents of the United States, and one of them (General Grant) has already addressed you. You will doubtless recall that, in the political campaign which resulted in the election of Benjamin Harrison as President, Harrison was taunted with wearing his grandfather's hat. The distinguished gentleman who has responded to the toast, "The Army of the United States," has demonstrated on more than one occasion his ability to wear the hat of his illustrious father, but for myself I may say that I once tried my father's hat on in private, and, finding it entirely too large, laid it aside in a safe place, where it will remain an heirloom in my family forever.

Daniel Webster, in one of his great speeches, said that "words are things," and I can readily see that this is true of some words. It is often true of toasts which are offered at patriotic meetings like the present. I believe it is certainly true of the toast "The Jamestown Settlement," to which you have asked me to respond to-night. Now "things" are divisible into things seen and things unseen; and in one respect I am at a great disadvantage compared with the gentlemen who have responded so well to the army and navy of the United States. They had each a visible subject, while I have an invisible one. When the stranger visits Jamestown, he sees nothing to remind him of its past consequence but the brick tower of the old church and the foundations of the State house and of a few other brick houses. But the army and navy of the United States have a way of making themselves both seen and heard and felt. When they are not fighting the common en-



emy, they amuse themselves with trying to decide which of the two is the better man. And it is fortunate that one is on the sea and the other is on the land, else we might wonder what would be the result of a collision between these leviathans of the Union.

I will never forget the sense of power which the Federal army impressed upon my boyish imagination in 1862, when the great host commanded by George B. McClellan marched through my father's plantation in Virginia. Our beautiful governess took us little children down to the lower barn, about half a mile distant from the mansion house, to see the long lines of blue passing by on their way to Richmond. There, with the enthusiasm of youth, outriveling Barbara Freitchie of Pennsylvania fame, we sang the "Bonny Blue Flag" and "Dixie" in the face of McClellan's men! Suddenly there rode up a general and his staff, covered with gold lace and braid, and the officer, who proved to be General Daniel Butterfield of New York, raising his hat gallantly to our fair governess, remarked: "While I do not approve the words, I appreciate highly the music of your song. Some of my men, however, may not be quite so sentimental and may do you injury." We took the hint and stopped our song. The army was marching on to Richmond at the time, and though it did not get there then on account of a remarkable gray wall in front of Richmond, it did do so three years later under the father of the distinguished gentleman who represents the army to-night. I may say that "to get there" is a peculiarity of the American army, more marked perhaps than any other.

As to the navy of the United States, I shall never forget the magnificent exhibit which it made last summer at the Jamestown celebration. It came up fully to the verses of the poet Keats, and was "a thing of beauty and a joy forever."

But Mr. Governor, as St. Paul said to the Corinthians, "there are bodies terrestrial and bodies celestial, and the glory of the terrestrial is one and the glory of the celestial is another." Jamestown never had much to show to the eye, even in the time of its greatest prosperity. It lives not in brick and mortar visible to all, but it raises its towers and its turrets in the patriotic soil, and those towers and monuments are glistening





in the sun-light of glory and will shine like the streets of the new Jerusalem on the pages of history forever. Its importance will be found in what it denotes, not in what it was, or is.

I feel my unworthiness to do the subject justice, but if you will bear with me I will try to point out some of the features which entitle the Jamestown settlement to the aspect of importance given to it by this society in the annual commemoration of its foundation.

In the first place, the Jamestown settlement is often referred to as denoting that form of civilization which prevailed in the South, as distinguished from that which took its origin at Plymouth on Cape Cod Bay. Much has been made of this distinction, and for generations the Jamestown rooster has been pitted against the rooster of Plymouth stock, sometimes to the advantage of the former and sometimes to the advantage of the latter. The orators of the two sections have exhausted the dictionary of panegyric and divided between them the virtues of mankind. Fortunate is the man who, like myself, can claim the union of both stocks. By the perfect logic of the situation he has a right to shake his own hands as the most perfect of human creatures.

Right here I want to make peace at once with the gentleman (Mr. Birdseye) who is to respond to the toast "The New England Pioneers." Like Cassius he has "a lean and hungry look," and such men are dangerous. I want to tell him that by virtue of my descent, I can endorse everything that he is going to say about the Pilgrim Fathers and more too.

On my mother's side I came from old Lyon Gardiner, who held the mouth of the Connecticut river against the Dutch and the Pequot warriors, and who, as a Puritan of the Puritans, fought under the Fighting Veres in the Netherlands, and while there had the sense to take to his bosom a Dutch wife, through whom I can, therefore, claim participation in all those solid and substantial virtues which have made this city the Metropolis of America! And yet while too much cannot be said in praise of the hardy pioneers of New England, there is praise left for Jamestown, for, as St. Paul said, "the glory of the Sun is one, the glory of the Moon is another, and the glory of the stars is still another," and there is room for both Jamestown



and Plymouth, as well as for New York, under old "glory," the flag of our country.

I am proud of my father's side; for I claim descent from a cavalier who settled about 1640 at Williamsburg, Va., where I reside, within a stone's throw of Jamestown. He held the office of Justice of the Peace of York County, and set an example in one thing especially. There is a deposition in the old records of the county which tells us that some one offered to pay a debt for Mr. Henry Tyler, whereupon Mr. Tyler remarked that he had tobacco enough in his own storehouse to pay his own debts. This, I hope, is a sufficient answer to the charge sometimes made that the cavaliers did not always attend to an I. O. U.

Now what does this Jamestown settlement denote under this idea of the cavalier settlement? Three things especially—a grim endurance that toyed with death as with a plaything; a love of freedom that was ready at any moment to war with tyranny; and a talent for government which, from the management of the plantations of tobacco and cotton, reached to the control of the affairs of a continent. Let me bestow a word on each of these features.

And first I wish to speak of the grim tenacity of purpose that characterized the Jamestown settlers. Nothing has ever been equal to it! Thanks to the works of Alexander Brown and of John Fiske the odium unjustly visited upon the settlers themselves has been placed at the doors where it properly belongs. The misfortune of the first years are to be attributed not to the colonists but to the circumstances over which they had no control. These circumstances were: The place of settlement, which was without springs of fresh water and was covered with huge trees, marshes and morasses; the scanty and ill-conditioned provisions sent to Jamestown; the neighborhood of a fierce and barbarous body of Indians who resented bitterly the intrusion of the whites upon their dominion; a climate singularly fatal to the newcomers; the form of government at Jamestown which produced discord and faction in the Council; and the policy of the London Company in England, which inhibited private property, established martial law, and forced the settlers to wear themselves out in fruitless



hunts for gold and in loading the returning ships with cedar, sassafras and staves. Thus it is but just to say that in those respects their situation was just the reverse of that of the Plymouth settlement on Cape Cod Bay; for there the Pilgrim Fathers had the control of their own government, the advantage of a dry and healthful situation, a sparkling stream of fresh water at their doors, open fields deserted by the Indians, whose nearest town was forty miles distant, a bay teeming with fish, and a country abounding in animals whose furs brought a large profit in England.

Under the terrible conditions prevailing on James River for many years, the people died "like cats and dogs," and hardly one in five survived the first year of his stay.

History can afford no better defence than when it says that, out of 7389 persons imported during the first eighteen years, 6294 laid down their lives that the nation might live. Did I go too far when I said that the settlers toyed with death as with a plaything?

Mr. Governor, another characteristic of those Jamestown settlers, one which they possessed in common with the Plymouth settlers, was their invincible love of freedom. They had the first jury trials, they instituted the first legislative assembly that ever met upon this continent, they made the first assertion, in 1624, of the indissoluble connection of taxation and representation. When Governor Sir John Harvey, in 1635, acted in defiance of the people, they seized him and sent him back to his master the King in England; when the Parliament, in 1652, proposed to reduce them to submission under the iron rule of Cromwell, they confronted them with the power of the Colony and would not recognize their authority except under a treaty which has more the spirit of an alliance than a submission; when Sir William Berkeley, in 1676, sought to make himself and his courtiers supreme, they drove him out of the government and would have defied even the power of Britain, had Bacon, their great leader, survived.

And this same stubborn spirit of liberty made glorious the annals of the Revolution. For if Massachusetts had her John and Samuel Adams, her James Otis and John Hancock, Virginia had her Patrick Henry to set the continent on fire with





his speech against the stamp act, Richard Henry Lee to offer the resolutions of freedom, and her Thomas Jefferson to throw into language more inspiring than the war songs of Tyrtæus, the Declaration of Independence, a paper which has been printed more often and translated into more languages than any other document ever written, the Bible alone excepted.

The third characteristic of this cavalier settlement was its talent for government. In war it furnished such names as Washington, the hero of the Revolution; Andrew Jackson and William Henry Harrison, the heroes of the war of 1812; Winfield Scott and Zachary Taylor, the heroes of the war with Mexico; and the action of the south in 1861 is, even in northern eyes, redeemed by the names of Thomas Jonathan Jackson and Robert E. Lee. In peace we have such presidents as Washington, Jefferson, Madison, Monroe, Andrew Jackson, John Tyler and Zachary Taylor, through whom the area of the Union was trebled, and the country rendered strong and powerful enough to withstand the shock of civil war. It was Monroe who told the nations of the world to keep off of this continent, and it was John Marshall who settled the construction of the constitution.

But, Mr. Governor, it strikes me that it is a very narrow way of looking at things to represent the Jamestown settlement as a southern settlement. There is a much higher significance to be given to it. I believe that entirely too much importance has been given to the differences between the North and South, between Plymouth and Jamestown. As a matter of fact, my researches in the early records sufficiently prove to me that the settlers of both regions came from the same sources and represented the merchants of the English towns. Such differences as existed developed from their life after their arrival. One became a community of towns, the other a community of country people. Religion had very little to do with the matter; for the Virginia people, while attached to the church of England, were Puritans, almost as strict in their notions of religion as the settlers of New England. Nor was the net result of their institutions so widely apart. Weeden, in his splendid work, "The Social and Economic History of New England," says that "the New England Institutions



were democratic in form but aristocratic in the substance of the administration." And so it may be said of Virginia that she was aristocratic in form but democratic in the substance of her administration. Down to a very late date the franchise in New England was a personal privilege and very limited. Owing to this and the restricted form of the ballot, every New England town was controlled by an oligarchy, who came under the description of the office holders in Mr. Jefferson's time, "Few died and none resigned."

In Virginia, on the other hand, though the local officers were chiefly appointed and not elected as in New England, the suffrage for the House of Burgesses who made the laws and controlled the offices was universal till 1736, and after that time for a long period, according to Prof. Jameson of the Carnegie Institution, was more general than in Massachusetts.

No matter how poor the white man was in Virginia, he had to be addressed as "Mr." and the Count de Chastellux says in his Memoirs that the poor Virginian never resembled a European peasant. He had his say in the government of affairs as well as the best, and was as much entitled to criticize the management. Thus, jumble the institutions of the two sections up, and they come out pretty near the same.

Now you may ask me, how about this higher meaning of Jamestown? The answer is that in its real and nobler sense this great Republic of the United States is Jamestown. Its free institutions, its unlimited power, its millions of citizens are but the flower and fruit of the seed planted in 1607 on the banks of the James.

Jamestown holds the unique position in history of being the oldest colony of Great Britain and the first established on this continent. Lord Bacon says that a first colony is like a first invention, "of more importance than all that followeth after." The success of this settlement was the inspiration of all the other settlements established upon the coast. When Jamestown was settled, the name "Virginia" denoted all that vast country, which is at present commensurate with the United States. The settlement was planted in the nick of time. Spain claimed the continent and viewed the movement resulting in Newport's expedition with anxious eyes. France was



extending her arms down from Canada along the New England coast, and there were few braver or more adventurous men than Champlain and De Monts.

If the settlement at Jamestown had been delayed, the Spaniards and French would have pre-empted the coast. But it was not delayed and while Spain was held at arms length, an expedition was sent from Jamestown by the iron-handed Dale, in 1613, which drove the French from Port Royal, St. Croix, and Mount Desert Island, thus keeping the New England coast open till the Puritan Colony came along. That colony, as is well known, sailed under a grant of the London Company and received aid and support from the settlers in Virginia. Bradford tells us in his "Plymouth Colony" that, when his company was "in dire distress" during the second Spring after its arrival, occasioned by the incoming of sixty-seven persons, "without a bite of bread," they were saved from starvation by a ship captain—John Huddleston—from the colony on James River, who shared his supplies with them and enabled them "to make shift till corn was ripe again."

All honor to this spirit of charity, and may the example of John Huddleston never be forgotten.

But Mr. Governor, I want to make one more claim for Jamestown. I wish to claim even more glory for it, if that is possible, than that it represents the beginning of the present United States. My motto, you see, is that of New York, "Excelsior." This day, May 13, the anniversary of the day on which Jamestown was settled, is suggestive of the beginnings of the domination of the English speaking people in the affairs of the world. You all know that the history of England during the 16th century is the story of the rise and development of a small kingdom into a successful rivalry with the gigantic power of Spain. How every American heart must exalt in the names that glorify those days—Queen Elizabeth, Walsingham, Burleigh, Drake, Hawkins, Raleigh and Gilbert. How we love to read of the expansion of England's commerce, of the developing of English industries, of the voyages of England's daring seamen, and of her victories by land and sea, which make the English chronicles of the 16th century so wonderfully interesting. It was in the noble Sir Humphrey





Gilbert that the rivalry with Spain attained its highest and noblest development. He conceived the idea that the planting of an English colony in America was the best means of "plucking the beard of the King of Spain," and enhancing the greatness of England. He sent two colonies to America and sealed his devotion to the enterprise with his death, uttering, as he went to his grave in the sea, those words of constancy and faith which will be taught to every American child forever, "We are as near heaven by sea as by land."

Then Sir Walter Raleigh took up the work of his half brother, and the unfortunate colonies at Roanoke were the result; but the time was not ripe. Then came the greatest event of the 16th century, the destruction of the Spanish Armada in the English channel, which for the first time threw the gates to America wide open. When in December, 1606, the glorious little fleet, commanded by Captain Christopher Newport—the Sarah Constant, the Goodspeed, and the Discovery,—sailed from London in England to Jamestown in Virginia, it was the first forward step taken by England after the smoke of the battle in the English channel had blown aside. That little fleet was weighted with a mighty message, for it told to all the world that the Spanish supremacy was at an end and that henceforward the affairs of the world would be conducted by the English speaking race. Since which time who can describe adequately the growth of either England or the United States, which sprang from her loins on the shores of Jamestown? The last vestige of Spanish authority as a world power sank in the sea in 1898, under the mighty blows of Dewey at Manila, and Sampson and Schley at Santiago; and England and America are shaking hands in the orient. Wherever one goes, he sees either the "meteor flag" of England or "the Star Spangled Banner" of the United States.

And now, Mr. Governor, the changes in the past are so great that, as we look into the far away future, we may be excused for asking, what will be the end of this prodigious advancement? I am not a prophet nor the son of a prophet, but I venture to say there will be no division, no disunion in this country again. The Philippine Islands, however, suggest that



there may be further absorption and "benevolent assimilation" on the part of this government.

One thing is certain; the United States cannot stand still. Growth is the law of all organisms, and the United States must grow. They can't help themselves. They must grow in education, wealth, power and territory, and so must all the other countries, especially the grand old Mother Country England. Then what will be the grand finale? Will it be a general crash of mighty opposing forces resulting in universal ruin and causing a relapse into the darkness and chaos of barbarism, or will it be the consummation of that perfect state of things pictured by the poet:

"When the war drums sound no longer and the battle flags are furled  
In the Parliament of man, the Federation of the world."

I am optimistic if anything, and it seems to me that in the principle of arbitration the apparently growing antagonisms will find a peaceful solution. Some day—it may be a hundred years hence,—it may be a thousand years hence, or even ten thousand years hence—the great universal parliament will be a reality, and in the absence of all wars even the army and navy of the United States will not be needed. But Jamestown will be then, even more than now, a glorious and brilliant memory. When that great period of peace in the world's history arrives there can be no doubt that the language and institutions of the whole earth will be those of the English speaking race, which first proclaimed its triumphant destiny from the wave-beaten shores of James River.

#### THE GOVERNOR

It is a matter of great regret to us that the Governor of the State of Connecticut, the new Governor-General of our Order, is not here to respond to the toast to "The Pioneers of New England;" but the address which Governor Woodruff probably prepared for us this evening is undoubtedly being delivered with much better effect at the conference of the Governors of the States being held upon the invitation of President Roosevelt at the White House. The place in the programme, however, will be filled by one of Governor Woodruff's most ardent supporters in the Connecticut Legislature,



the Hon. Arthur J. Birdseye, Governor of our Connecticut Society, who has consented on only a few minutes' notice to take Governor Woodruff's place. No one, perhaps, is better qualified to speak for the New England Pioneers than a citizen of Connecticut. Settled by emigrants from the old college town of Newtown, now Cambridge, Mass., boasting of the first written constitution known to history that created a government, and sustaining to the government of the United States to-day a closer lineal relationship than that of any other of the thirteen colonies, Connecticut represents the best product of New England genius. And so, forgetting the contumacy with which the English settlers of Connecticut crowded out our Dutch pioneers, and remembering only that which is good in them, I take pleasure in presenting as their representative, Governor Birdseye.\*

#### HON. ARTHUR J. BIRDSEYE

*Governor, Associates, Ladies:* I was turned from the bosom wife of my family, conducted to this seat at the right of the Toast Master, and there I found these two cards: "Hon. Rolin S. Woodruff," "Mr. Arthur J. Birdseye." I was told I was to impersonate him. Now I do not know why I am denied the

\*Hon. Arthur J. Birdseye, of Farmington, Conn., Governor of the Connecticut Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America, was born in Waterloo, N. Y., August 21, 1858, and was educated in the Waterloo Academy. In early life he entered the jewelry business and afterwards spent two years in the brokerage business in Wall Street, New York City. Since 1893 he has been in the life insurance business, holding responsible positions in the Nederland Life Insurance Co., of Amsterdam, Holland, and the Mutual Benefit Life Insurance Co., of Newark, N. J., and residing successively in Rochester, N. Y., Newark, N. J., the State of Ohio, and Hartford, Conn. He is now State Agent for the last-named company for Connecticut. In 1907-8 he was member of the Connecticut Legislature, being elected as a Democrat from the Republican town of Farmington, and among other legislation was author of "Birdseye's Money Shark Bill" to prevent the loaning of money at exorbitant rates to wage earners on the security of their wages. As a student of the economics of life insurance, he has lectured at Dartmouth and Williams Colleges and other educational institutions. He is a vestryman and treasurer of St. James Episcopal Church of Farmington; a director of the Children's Aid Society; an officer of Farmington Grange; a Knight Templar, 32d degree Mason, Shriner; and member of the Hartford Municipal Art Society and numerous other organizations and clubs. He is a member of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America partly by virtue of his descent from Deacon John Birdseye, who settled in Windsor, Conn., in 1636.





title of "Honorable" (a member of the last Legislature in Connecticut), but I see they have written it "Mr." I am reminded of my friend, Senator Luther, President of Trinity College. Dr. Luther was also elected a member of the last General Assembly in Connecticut. Someone asked him one day which title he preferred, "Doctor," "Professor," or "Senator," or if he preferred to be called just plain "Mr." He replied: "I think 'Mr.' is the hardest title to live up to," and it may be true. I think I am satisfied with "Mr." although it may be that I am called "Mr." on this card because I was elected a Democrat in Connecticut; but if Governor Woodruff were here he would not stand for that, because many times he said that I was the best Republican in the State of Connecticut.

Now I don't know who I am yet. I am something like the Scotchman who went to market. Some of the farmers in Scotland have no horse and cart, but Tavis had a horse and cart and he went to market. He disposed of his products and, like the other farmers, visited the tavern again and again, and when it was time to go home he was rather "How come you so?" But Tavis gets the horse and starts on his homeward way, thinking when he got to the straight road he could lie down in the cart and go to sleep. So when he got on the last stretch he lay down and took a nap. The horse had not gone far before two friends of Tavis' met the horse and cart. Knowing Tavis' usual condition on market day, they unhitched the horse and sent the horse on home. Tavis slept peacefully until the morning, when he woke up, looked around, rubbed his eyes, crept out of the cart, walked around it, and said: "Am I Tavis, or am I somebody else? If I am Tavis I have lost my horse; if I'm somebody else I have found a cart." So when I found these cards, I said: "Am I Woodruff, or am I Birdseye? If I am Woodruff, I have found a Governor; if I am Birdseye, I have drawn a lemon."

I see the subject assigned to our Governor is "The New England Pioneers." Now if there is any one subject with which I am more familiar than another, it is the subject of Pioneers, for I am one myself. I landed in Connecticut in 1636. I lived in Connecticut until 1810, when I crept to Seneca County, New York. There I stayed long enough for my father



and mother to be born, and came back to Connecticut in 1900.

But of all the Pioneers of whom I know, there is one that I never tire of talking about, and that is the man whose qualities of heart and mind have endeared him to every citizen of the State of Connecticut; the man whom you have to-day elected Governor General of this Society; the man who is an ex-Governor of our Connecticut Society; the man who is Governor of Connecticut, and if the rank and file of the people of Connecticut have their way, he shall continue to be the Governor of Connecticut as long as he lives. I may say of Governor Woodruff, and truthfully, that I think he is the most loved man in the State of Connecticut to-day. Connecticut is not unappreciative of the honor conferred upon her to-day in the election of one of her citizens to the Governor-Generalship of this great Order, and accepts the compliment with grace and merit.

Prior to coming to Connecticut for the last time I had the privilege of living three years in Ohio. When in the City of Cincinnati I had an important business engagement with a prominent banker, and I said to him:

"Mr. Seasongood, I am going to leave Ohio."

"Where are you going?"

"To Connecticut."

"Well, where are you going to settle in Connecticut?"

"Hartford."

"I congratulate you. Hartford is the most beautiful city in this country, but," he said, "you will not find many Jews in Connecticut."

"Is that so; why?"

"I don't know, unless it is because the Jews seldom settle where the people are smarter than they."

I suppose all of you have heard of the Nutmeg State, and how Connecticut gained that unenviable notoriety through a debate in Congress in which a Congressman accused a certain member of selling wooden nutmegs in the South. We have not heard quite the last of it yet; but about the only place you see or hear of it is possibly in travelling through Connecticut, where you will occasionally see some saloon labeled "Nutmeg House." No one else uses it. We may get rid of that if the Prohibition cause strikes Connecticut, and I hope it will, even



if it does nothing but that. But as a rule, you will hear very little of the "wooden nutmeg" now, and whenever organizations leave Connecticut for other parts of the country, you will find that instead of the wooden nutmeg taken along as a souvenir, it is an acorn from the Charter Oak.

But the Patriotic Societies have done one thing for Connecticut, or one thing has been done through the Patriotic Societies, and that is to give Connecticut its proper name with the other States. We have the Bay State, the Granite State, the Empire State, and others of complimentary terms, but it seemed to remain for Connecticut to have the ridiculous nick-name mentioned. Now, however, we have popularly adopted the name of the "Constitution State." That term has become universal in Connecticut and through the Patriotic Societies it has gone broadcast so that outside of Connecticut we rarely hear the State referred to as the "Nutmeg State."

Connecticut is peculiar in many ways. In the first place there are more patents granted to the citizens of Connecticut than all the other States to Mason and Dixon's line combined. The people are of an inquiring turn of mind. You have often heard the saying: "I want to know." Well, that is the position of the Connecticut man; "I want to know." That has taken hold of the newcomers, and we are teaching the young ideas how to shoot.

I am reminded of a school teacher in Connecticut who had a lot of little urchins, mostly foreign born, and they were a pretty dirty lot too. One afternoon she thought she would give them a talk on cleanliness, so she took half an hour, told them how beautiful it was to be clean and neat and likened a clean child to flowers. The children went home and one little boy told his mother how he must have his face washed and come to school the next day with clean clothes, but he could not remember anything about the flowers but a rose. The next morning little Johnnie came to school with a note, which read: "Teacher, Johnnie is no rose. We send him to school to be learnt, not to be smelt." And so the Connecticut people all want to "learn" and they are "learned."

In the General Court to-day it was voted that the next meeting be held in Hartford; and as Governor of the Connecticut





Society, I want to extend a very urgent invitation to all of you to be with us. It will be the most beautiful season of the year and we shall attempt to show you the beauties of the most magnificent city of America.

### THE GOVERNOR

To the country from which the Pioneers of Jamestown and the Pioneers of New England came, our national indebtedness is great. To speak of this debt, this evening, we are very happy to have one who is an Englishman by birth and an American by "adoption and grace," Lieut. John E. G. Higgins, President of the Saint George's Society of New York. It is an evidence of the felicitous condition of national sentiment in both countries that an Englishman can come to a patriotic gathering like this, and that both he and we, remembering that blood is thicker than water, can recall and take delight in the imperishable traditions which we have in common. When I was in England two years ago, investigating the ancestry of Washington, the Dean of Durham referred with pride to our national hero as the "Washington of Durham and the States." When Mr. Choate, on the eve of his retirement from our Ambassadorship to the Court of Saint James, was made a Bencher of the Middle Temple, and when in the presence of King Edward and a brilliant company he signed the immortal roll of Benchers, an assistant turned back several leaves of the ancient book to a page bearing the names of three Benchers who had subsequently signed the Declaration of Independence. This was the King's little joke, and afforded a fresh illustration of the composure with which England contemplates the events of 1776 and years immediately succeeding. In recognition of the tie that binds us to Mother England, the Order of the Founders and Patriots bears the Cross of Saint George in its Standard; and we can give no better pledge than that of the pleasure with which we welcome the next speaker, Lieutenant Higgins, the President of the Saint George's Society of New York.\*

\* Lieutenant John E. Grote Higgins was born at Wareside, in Hertfordshire, England, of which place his father was Vicar. He was educated at Stubbington House, a naval school, and subsequently on the Continent. He was a Lieutenant of the 2nd Herts Volunteers. He came to this coun-



## LIEUTENANT JOHN E. GROTE HIGGENS

*Mr. Chairman, Ladies and Gentlemen:* I find myself in a rather unusual position this evening. I think that we all know that it is pleasant to get our friends in a corner and quietly tell them what we or our forebears have done for them or for humanity at large. It is, however, very unusual for our friends to ask us to tell them these things. This is what you have done. You have asked an Englishman to speak to-night on the subject of America's debt to England. I confess I feel a good deal embarrassed by your generous confidence in my modesty.

My task has, however, been made easy for me, for the President of William and Mary College who addressed you this evening has said all, or nearly all, that should be said of the part that England played in founding this great Western Empire.

If I had but a very small part of the profound knowledge possessed by my distinguished countryman, the present British Ambassador to Washington, Mr. James Bryce, I should be able to say something you might care to listen to, of our common language and literature—that language and literature that has been so enriched by the great speakers and writers of this land. I might be able to speak of your laws, founded as I believe they are, largely upon English law, and of the idea of personal liberty which we hold in common.

I might speak of your system of education, and of the great colleges founded here by our English ancestors.

To-day you are repaying this debt, for not long ago English educators came here to study your school system, and this summer American school teachers are going to England, and will, I fancy, be able to teach more than they learn of the best methods of primary education.

Of these things I do not feel competent to speak.

try in 1874 and farmed in Virginia. He came to New York in 1883 to engage in the cotton business and is a member of the Cotton Exchange and has served on the Board of Managers of that institution. He has always taken a keen interest in the St. George's Society and been closely identified with the work of the Society. He was a member of the Executive Committee and has served as Chairman of this Committee, Vice-President, and for the past two years has been President of the Society.



The President of William and Mary College has spoken to you of what England did in founding Jamestown, and of those who founded the New England Colonies. Now I am not going to take up your time, but may I ask your indulgence for a moment while I point out, or I should say suggest how it was that these early English settlers accomplished what they did.

Ladies and Gentlemen, I believe that the secret of the success of the English as a colonizing people, has been their love of outdoor country life. It has been said that "the English are forever homesick for out of doors," and I believe that is the homesickness that builds new empires.

The dweller in the city has his virtues, but they are not those of the pioneer. Clear heads and stout hearts and a love of order and good government belong to the country people.

The early settlers in this country brought with them this love of country life. When they had made themselves secure against the Indians, they tried to lead, on their plantations and farms, a life such as they had known in the old land.

I shall never forget my first trip up the James River, and my delight at seeing the old houses, surrounded by their lawns and gardens, that graced the banks of that historic stream. I felt that I was in no strange land but in a bit of old England.

The people I met not only spoke my language, but their tastes were my tastes. Fox hunting, shooting, and perhaps a good horse race, and every form of out-door sport which is so dear to the English heart.

Later when I came to New York, I found myself among young men and young women to whom every kind of out-door game was familiar—young men and young women who were leading, in their leisure hours, healthy out-door lives and thereby gaining for themselves healthy minds and bodies.

To-day we see on all sides an ever increasing desire to leave the cities and seek homes in the country. Before long the great mass of American people will once more be country bred. They will grow up not only with a love of sport and adventure which they have to-day, but with a love of the trees, and the flowers, and the birds, and the peace of a country home.

Ladies and Gentlemen, you have asked me to say what this country owes to England, and I reply, that one great debt you





owe to England is that passion for out-door country life without which, I believe, no people can long be great or free.

### THE GOVERNOR

When President Tyler was speaking, I thought he was going to appropriate to two sections, Virginia and New England, all the credit for colonizing the United States, but toward the end, he recognized, with Caesar, that "all Gaul is divided into three parts," whether you spell it Gaul or gall. The claim of the third part is to be presented by our distinguished fellow citizen, Col. John W. Vrooman, ex-President of the Holland Society and a true Dutchman. As a descendant of that amphibious race, it was natural that at the time of the Civil War he should take to the water as a naval volunteer, and as such he participated in both attacks on Fort Fisher. Our English cousins take considerable pride in the fact that they founded Jamestown some sixteen years before the Dutch made their first permanent settlement in this State; but we must not forget that the way for English colonization was opened up by the defeat of Spain's "Invincible Armada" in 1588, and that the success of that great English victory was largely made possible by the Netherlands who kept the Duke of Parma's army from cooperating with the Spanish Fleet. England and Holland, hand in hand, have shaped the history of this continent. Had either been absent, how different that history, in all probability, would have been. To speak for our National Debt to the The Netherlands, I have the honor of presenting Col. Vrooman.\*

\* Col. John Wright Vrooman was born in Herkimer County, N. Y., March 28, 1844, being descended from Holland Dutch ancestors who were prominent in early American history and during the American Revolution. He was a volunteer in the United States Navy during the Civil War, taking part in both attacks on Fort Fisher. After that he was admitted to the bar; practiced in Herkimer; was Chief Clerk of the Surrogate's Court of Herkimer County, 1868-1878; Deputy Clerk of New York State Assembly, 1876-1877; Secretary of State Senate, 1878-1888; member of Republican State Committee and Secretary, 1880-1888; Republican nominee for Lieutenant-Governor, 1891; and Presidential Elector, 1892. He was a banker in Herkimer prior to 1890, since which time he has been in the insurance business in New York City. He was Grand Master of Masons of New York in 1889-1891; was formerly President of the Holland Society, and is prominently identified with charitable and financial institutions, the Grand Army of the Republic, and other veteran and patriotic organizations.



## COLONEL JOHN W. VROOMAN

*Ladies and Gentlemen:* A few days ago I received an invitation from Governor Hall to respond to a toast upon this occasion; and, inasmuch as it was accompanied by a paid-for dinner ticket, I could not very well decline. To make it very easy for the audience he said he would put me down as the last speaker, and, in the event of friends leaving to catch late trains, I would have an appreciative audience consisting of himself and the waiters. As if this were not sufficient, he made the further statement that my time was limited to ten minutes and that within that limit I must tell all I knew about the debt this country owed to my mother country of Holland.

Surely you sympathize with me, as I know full well that I could not in ten times ten minutes,—nay, in ten hours,—speak of all the good that might be spoken regarding the influence Holland wielded in helping to build the foundation of this fair land of ours. Why, ladies and gentlemen, this stop-watch time-limit which has been placed upon me is quite as embarrassing as an incident that occurred when I was a student at the old Academy in the Mohawk Valley. Our old Scotch Professor in Philosophy would give each student in his class a very difficult subject, and without a moment's warning require him to stand up on his feet and extemporize. I vividly recall the consternation in my mind when one day he suddenly said: "Vrooman, stand up! Subject, Immortality of the Soul. Time: two minutes."

Governor Hall, I hope you will not count these preliminary remarks against my time-limit.

For your courteous invitation, Mr. Governor, I thank you. For the gracious reception given me by the members of this Society I shall be your debtor always.

It seems particularly fitting that the New York Society of Founders and Patriots should assemble to-night, because by so doing it not only commemorates the Anniversary of the Settlement of Jamestown, one of the most eventful occurrences in the romantic annals of our country, but it also honors the General Court of the Order now meeting in this city.

This occasion, this gathering of the finest representatives of



American manhood and womanhood, is indeed an inspiration, and yet with the uplift of spirit that reaches to your anniversary thought and good cheer come reflections of graver import than sometimes follow the social feast.

Anniversary occasions do indeed suggest reflection. They are milestones on our journey through life, pointing to past effort and future hope. I believe in celebrating anniversaries and enjoying festivities, because they cement friendships, which not only make us happy in our individual lives, but give birth to societies like this which tend to cultivate the highest ideals and produce the purest type of citizenship.

We are essentially a nation of hero-worshippers; and while the majestic figures in our country's history need no studied word nor written record to keep them in the perpetual memory of a grateful people, yet sentiment and justice call upon us to accord every honor to our heroes in song and story, in substantial preferment and permanent memorial, thus expressing our gratitude and appreciation for the countless benefits received through the sacrifices of those who imperilled their lives to preserve unsullied the sacred heritage bequeathed us by our fathers.

I am a firm believer in the abiding good to individual and community of any society that keeps in tender recollection home and motherland; that fosters reverent feeling for friend and fireside; and by contemplation of the glorious history of the past draws inspiration for an active present ideal.

The world, in the progress of its civilization, moves onward with such rapidity that many an ideal that was to our forefathers but as the gleam of a star above some distant mountain peak is to us of the present a common necessity and reality.

Well has Emerson said "Hitch your wagon to a star, for so long as earth is earth and heaven is heaven, so long as humanity is on earth and God in heaven, so long will the human soul reach up to and be guided by those heavenly lights which in our poverty of speech we term high ideals."

I believe in high ideals for a nation as well as for an individual. Not the ideals which make the person a "dreamer of dreams," but in that nobler meaning made possible by this glorious Twentieth Century for the man who dreams a dream





and then transforms it into action; who sees a vision of truth and beauty and rests not until he has made it an inspiring reality.

The Order of Founders and Patriots was born for such patriotic purposes and should live for such ideals. It is indeed fitting that a beginning founded upon such worthy principles should prosper to the end of time, and I am sure other societies in common with this are also laboring to elevate and educate by appealing to our better natures.

When the son of a Welchman finds no value in the life of St. David; when the brawny Scotchman cares naught for the name of St. Andrew; when the warm Irish heart feels no thrill at the mention of St. Patrick; when the gallant son of England loses his affection for St. George; when the sturdy Dutchman fails to venerate William the Silent; when this and other patriotic societies cease to receive inspiration from the brave deeds of their forefathers; then, and not till then, will they die, as idle and useless. But so long as the patriotism of the past is kept alive by the patriotism of the present, so long as New York remembers her Dutch founders, and New England remembers her Puritans, and the land of the South remembers her Cavaliers, such organizations will continue to strengthen the ties of birth and of blood and do honor to the beneficent influences exerted by and upon the noble citizens enrolled as members.

I have been assigned by your Governor to speak of our Debt to Holland. My friend insisted that I was too good a Dutchman to shirk the duty of speaking for the motherland, but after listening to the eloquence of the distinguished gentlemen preceding me I resemble very much the fellow who paraded all day in a new overcoat with a price tag of \$60 left on the outside, and when his wife asked him what in the world he left that tag on for, replied: "Why it only cost me \$7, but I want my friends to think I am wearing a \$60 coat." I am a sort of \$7 fellow following your \$60 orators. However, I probably feel as well as my Irish friend up in the Mohawk Valley, who was captain of one of our old militia companies, when, responding to a toast for his company, he said: "Gentlemen, here is to my gallant Company C, EQUAL TO NONE." So, Mr. Gov-



ernor, I am surely an equal in that respect. I have not been given an envious heart, but if ever I envied any one it would be the successful orator. How I wish I might have the tongue of the eloquent speaker that I might do justice to the subject of our Debt to Holland!

With all my heart I honor and revere our honest, thrifty Dutch ancestors, schooled to patience and perseverance by a perpetual battle for life and for land against the approaching invader and the encroaching sea. They lived a life of hospitable simplicity, free from class discrimination and religious bigotry; they left home and motherland in the early days and sailed over strange seas to a far-off world, bringing with them those priceless gifts of love of liberty, devotion to home, loyalty to school and faithfulness to Church. May we one and all unite in preserving these sacred institutions bequeathed us by our sterling forefathers, and may we with God's help reflect in our own characters the same admirable traits which were common to those Dutchmen of the past.

I am proud to present to this Society warm-hearted greetings from the descendants of Holland, and as in times past so to-day they are no empty words. Whatever may be thought or said of a Dutchman, one thing has been proved. His greeting is sometimes original, always forceful, invariably sincere. Since the days when that old Dutch hero, Van Tromp, greeted the Spanish Navy with a broom nailed to the masthead; since the days when the Hollanders faced the enemy with broken dykes, and the defiant cry "better a drowned land than a lost land," the sons and daughters of such a people have welcomed all that makes for liberty and enlightenment with open hearts and helping arms, and have greeted that which tends to oppression and dishonor with unceasing resistance and intense hatred.

The Dutchman's greeting to friends is always earnest, to foes always effective. When in the early days of the American Revolution Parliament made plans to conquer the unruly colonies, it was the stubborn Dutchmen of the Hudson and Mohawk Valleys who brought some of those plans to naught, thereby helping to preserve the colonies and making possible the founding of this and kindred societies.

The Dutchman's greeting is marked by generosity, not big-



otry. We are told that more than two centuries ago an official proclamation was issued by the burgomaster and the Court of Leyden refusing no honest person residence in that city provided he behaved himself. I am proud of the Dutch of America because they have very generally inherited the good behavior of their ancestors. I am proud of little Holland which has stood for so much that elevates character and educates mankind. It has stood for pluck, not luck; for action, not accident. It endeavored through our ancestors, as we endeavor to-day, to create rather than to criticize.

We must ever gratefully remember that it was the fearless Dutchmen across the sea who gave the first foreign salute to the stars and stripes, although the result of this expression of sympathy was war with England.

As our Dutch forefathers in times past fought with energy for this country and protected their homes with unswerving fidelity, so under the folds of Old Glory their sons to-day would ever do the same.

May this Society and others here represented, mindful of Holland's friendship and historic past, made glorious by heroic men, labor as they labored to increase that spirit of broadening thought, strengthening character, and elevating ambition which has ever marked the achievements of all ages.

May such a noble ancestry, with its grand history, inspire us to keep unsullied forever the sacred heritage bequeathed us with so many precious memories. Catching the enthusiasm and inspiration, beginning with such heroic endeavor, continuing with such commendable enterprise, coupled with such dogged determination, do you wonder that Holland gave a home and a welcome for the oppressed of every clime; do you wonder that opportunity was granted for broadest freedom of religious worship; do you wonder that they were lovers of home, country and God?

Mr. Governor, such unceasing labor for humanity and such untiring work for God cannot be confined within the limits of any country. It belongs to the world. And so it was that a mere handful of brave men left Holland inspired by its best teachings of love, loyalty, education and religion, and landing on Plymouth Rock laid for this Republic the foundation of our





civil and religious liberty. The immortal principles of freedom, equality and liberality were placed in the Declaration of Independence largely as a result of this Dutch influence. Following this, the cornerstone of the temple of freedom was laid by all the patriots of the American Revolution. The building was completed by the loyalty of succeeding generations and dedicated to the service of God and a free people. It stands to-day the most superb model of civil and religious architecture the world has ever seen.

The story is told that there came into one of the ancient cathedrals of Holland during its construction an old and feeble man who applied for work. Pitying his condition, work was given him, but doubting his ability he was placed high up in the groins of the structure and in the shadow. Morning after morning he went up to his work, and at evening came down, until one day he was missed, and then the master-builder, ascending the scaffold, found the old workman dead, but not until his appointed task was done, for he had carved in the shadow and in the most inconspicuous place in that cathedral a figure of wondrous beauty. It was the image of her he had long ago loved and lost. Into it he had carved his very life, his own soul, and it was indeed beautiful because it was a labor of love. Even to-day, as the sun casts its last rays through one of the great windows of that vast edifice, it searches out and glorifies the exquisite figure carved by that old workman with such transcendent beauty that people come from far and near to admire.

Founders and Patriots and Friends, who honor me at this late hour with your presence, I am sure you appreciate that your ancestors loyally worked as you now lovingly work in the shadow of a mighty building. It is indeed a labor of loyalty and love and many a life figure has been and is being carved in far-away corners; but, thanks be to God, you of to-day are not carving an inanimate statue like that in the old cathedral, but out of your work come better things than you ever dreamed of, because you are breathing into the figures you carve ideal life, abiding love, unswerving loyalty. Your work is beautified by the chisel of Fraternity and warmed by patriotic influence; and so, in the mighty building of Liberty founded by George Wash-



ington, completed by Abraham Lincoln, you, in common with other Fraternities have carved and will carve into living beauty marvellous figures into which the souls of the sovereigns of this, the greatest country on earth, will ever be receiving the breath of a nobler and grander life. God be praised that beyond the bitter pain, the cruel loss, the deep agony, borne by our forefathers; beyond a divided nation in the past,—all of which is now a memory,—we gratefully see to-day a united people, no North land, no South land, but one Home land.

To-day, across the sea, the nations are looking toward the western sun and behold this beautiful structure, the inheritance bequeathed us by our Fathers, which we are proud to call the United States of America,—better than that, our country, aye! still better, OUR HOME.

Ladies and gentlemen, what will be your part, what will be my part, in continuing the work of beautifying and ennobling this glorious structure?

#### THE GOVERNOR

At the conclusion of this delightful feast of reason and flow of soul, I feel sure that I express the very hearty sentiment of everyone in this company when I offer to you (addressing the speakers) our grateful appreciation for the instruction and the inspiration which you have given us. And (turning to the company), as I have welcomed the coming, so I speed the parting guest, and bid you Good Night.



## Publications of the New York Society

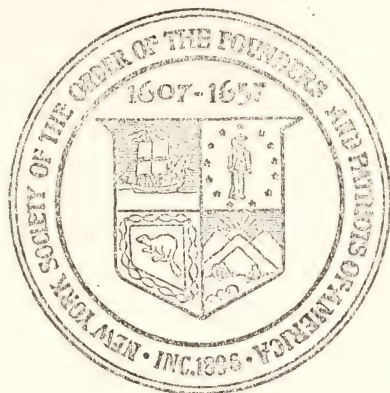
1. "THE SETTLEMENT OF NEW YORK," by George Rogers Howell, March 18, 1897.
2. "THE BATTLE OF LEXINGTON," by Hon. John Winslow, May 13, 1897.
3. "GEORGE CLINTON," by Col. R. E. Prime, December 15, 1902.
4. "WASHINGTON, LINCOLN AND GRANT," by Gen James Grant Wilson, April 6, 1903.
5. "EARLY NEW YORK," by Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt, January 15, 1904.
6. "THOMAS HOOKER, THE FIRST AMERICAN DEMOCRAT," by Walter Seth Logan, February 19, 1904.
7. "EARLY LONG ISLAND," by Hon. Wm. Winton Goodrich, March 16, 1904.
8. "BANQUET ADDRESSES," May 13, 1904.
9. "THE PHILIPPINES AND THE FILIPINOS," by Maj. Gen. Fred'k D. Grant, December 10, 1904.
10. "SOME SOCIAL THEORIES OF THE REVOLUTION," by Theodore Gilman, January 31, 1905.
11. "BANQUET ADDRESSES," May 13, 1905.
12. "THE STORY OF THE PEQUOT WAR," by Thos. Egleston, LL. D., Ph. D., December 15, 1905.
13. "DISTINCTIVE TRAITS OF A DUTCHMAN," by Col. John W. Vrooman, February 23, 1906.
14. "AN INCIDENT OF THE ALABAMA CLAIMS ARBITRATION," by Col. Ralph E. Prime, March 23, 1906.
15. "BANQUET ADDRESSES AND MEMOIR OF HON. ROBT. B. ROOSEVELT," May 14, 1906.
16. "CONSTITUTION, BY-LAWS AND REGULATIONS OF THE ORDER, AND LIST OF MEMBERS OF THE GENERAL COURT, WITH BY-LAWS AND LIST OF MEMBERS OF THE NEW YORK SOCIETY," November 1, 1906.
17. "SOME MUNICIPAL PROBLEMS THAT VEXED THE FOUNDERS," by Rev. Wm. Reed Eastman, December 14, 1906.
18. "A VANISHED RACE OF ABORIGINAL FOUNDERS," by Brig. Genl. Henry Stuart Turrill, U. S. A., February 14, 1907.
19. "LIST OF OFFICERS AND MEMBERS OF THE NEW YORK SOCIETY," November 15, 1907.
20. "THE HUDSON VALLEY IN THE REVOLUTION," by Francis Whiting Halsey, December 13, 1907.
21. "AMERICAN TERRITORY IN TURKEY; OR, ADMIRAL FARRAGUT'S VISIT TO CONSTANTINOPLE AND THE EXTRA-TERRITORIALITY OF ROBERT COLLEGE," by Ralph E. Prime, LL. D., D. C. L., February 14, 1908.
22. "PROCEEDINGS OF THE TWELFTH ANNUAL BANQUET OF THE NEW YORK SOCIETY OF THE ORDER OF THE FOUNDERS AND PATRIOTS OF AMERICA," May 13, 1908.





Some Things The Colony of North Carolina Did,  
And Did First, In The Founding of  
English-Speaking America

---



"STEADFAST FOR GOD AND COUNTRY"

---

AN ADDRESS BY

WILLIAM EDWARD FITCH, M.D.

Historian and Registrar-General

DELIVERED BEFORE

THE NEW YORK SOCIETY

OF THE

ORDER OF THE FOUNDERS AND

PATRIOTS OF AMERICA

AT THE HOTEL MANHATTAN, NEW YORK

---

DECEMBER 11, 1908



THE NEW YORK SOCIETY  
OF THE  
ORDER OF THE FOUNDERS AND PATRIOTS OF AMERICA

---

OFFICERS

FOR THE YEAR ENDING APRIL, 19, 1910

*Governor*

GEORGE CLINTON BATCHELLER, LL.D.

*Deputy Governor*

COL. HENRY W. SACKETT

*Chaplain*

REV. EDWARD PAYSON JOHNSON, D. D.

*Secretary*

CHARLES EDEY FAY

*Treasurer*

THEODORE GILMAN

*State Attorney*

JOHN C. COLEMAN

*Registrar*

CLARENCE ETTIENNE LEONARD

*Genealogist*

LOUIS ANNIN AMES

*Historian*

WILLIAM EDWARD FITCH, M. D.

*Councillors*

1907-10

GEN. STEWART LYNDON WOODFORD

THEODORE FITCH

COL. GEORGE E. DEWEY

1908-11

COL. RALPH EARL PRIME

EDGAR ABEL TURRELL

CHARLES W. B. WILKINSON

1909-12

MAJOR-GEN. FREDERICK D. GRANT, U. S. A.

MATTHEW HINMAN

RICHARD HUBBARD ROBERTS



## Some Things The Colony of North Carolina Did, And Did First, In The Founding of English-Speaking America

---

Mr. Governor, Ladies and fellow Associates, When your distinguished Governor requested me to entertain you this evening by telling you what the Colonists of the colony of North Carolina did towards the founding of this country, I consented because I thought that some one should unlock the store-house of North Carolina's historical treasures, and pay tribute, even at this late date, to the heroes who first opposed the flag of Great Britain on American soil. In some respects, perhaps, I am qualified to speak on this subject, for while my Scotch ancestors were helping to settle North Carolina and contributing their mite towards the foundation of American freedom and independence, my English "Fitch" ancestors were settling and governing the colony of Connecticut, and later, doubtless, contributing their share in the manufacture of wooden nutmegs and leather hams, for which that State was famous. I am, then, what might be termed a "Tar Heel" with a nutmeg flavoring.

No State in the Union can present a wider or more diversified field for historical inquiry than North Carolina. On her shores the first settlement of English colonists in the new world was established; within her borders the first resistance to British authority was made; by her people the first battle of the American Revolution was fought; and by her noble sons the first actual Declaration of American Independence was made.

### THE FIRST ENGLISH SETTLEMENT.

On the sandy banks of Roanoke Island, between Pamlico and Albermarle Sounds, the English flag was first unfurled to the breeze of the new world. It was on this Island the first expedition of Sir Walter Raleigh landed on July 4th, 1584. "The fragrance of the flowers as they drew near the Island," says Armidas in his report to Raleigh, "was as if they were in the midst of some delicate garden redolent with all manner of odoriferous flowers." The loveliness of the scenery and the mildness of the climate were excelled by the gentleness of the native inhabitants—Indians—who welcomed the strangers with





all of the southern hospitality which even at this day is characteristic of the "Old North State." The wife of the Indian chief, Granganimeo, offered the strangers planked shad, roasted Irish potatoes and scuppernong grapes. Granganimeo then passed the pipe instead of cigars and the Englishman enjoyed his first smoke. In this same report Armidas calls Raleigh's attention to the celebrated scuppernong grape, which then as now, grasps the noble oak with its tendrils and yields abundant crops under the influence of semi-tropical eastern North Carolina. After feasting with Granganimeo, the English made inquiry concerning the esculent tubers which they had eaten and now form a part of the bill-of-fare for almost all nations. They were shown where they were grown and afterward learned it was a member of the night shade family, the *Solanum tuberosum*—Irish potato—and in 1586 it is said Sir Walter Raleigh, on returning from his second expedition to Roanoke Island, carried a cargo of this new and strange vegetable to England and brought it to the notice of Queen Elizabeth.

The Colony of North Carolina was peopled by cavalier emigrants from the Continent and the British Isles—Scotch, Irish, English, Swiss and French Huguenots. They were a practical people and emigrated to America, not as refugees from civil, metaphysical, philosophical, or religious intolerance incident to that bitter controversial age, but to challenge new opportunities in fresh and undeveloped fields, and in search of fertile lands, that they might cultivate and reap the fruits thereof with the avowed purpose of building a new State upon a new continent. Freedom, entire freedom was enjoyed without anxiety by the settlers who scattered among the forests, hermits with wives and children resting upon the bosom of nature in perfect harmony with the wilderness of their gentle clime.

This colony was the most free and independent country ever organized by man. Freedom of conscience, exemption from taxation except by their own consent; gratuities in land to every immigrant and other equitable considerations claimed the prompt legislative action of the Colonists. Their simple laws suited a people who were as free as the air of their country—who, when oppressed were as rough as the billows of the ocean. They submitted to no unjust laws, and bowed their knees to no earthly monarch.



The colony of North Carolina, by grant from Charles II, dated 1665—to the Lords Proprietors, extending from 29' to 36' 30" North Latitude on the Atlantic side, and westward from ocean to ocean, including the whole region from the present northern boundary line of North Carolina to the St. Johns River in Florida.

At the request of the Lords proprietors, the celebrated author of the "Human Understanding" John Locke (see works of Locke, 8th edition, vol. 10, page 175) was employed to draft and prepare a constitution for the government of the province of Carolina (N. C. Rev. & State Records vol. 1, page 187). He prepared an elaborate scheme—"The Fundamental Constitution"—which provided for three orders of nobility and four houses of parliament, but the scheme was never put into successful operation because the Colonists demanded a more free form of government.

Royal Governor Spotswood of the Colony of Virginia, in a letter addressed to Queen Elizabeth, said: "It has so long been the practice of the people of the Colony of North Carolina to resist and imprison their Governors, that they now look upon it as a lawful procedure" (Spotswood Ms). Whenever a Royal Governor became haughty in conduct, or his administration became obnoxious from oppressive taxation, extortion or tyranny, he was seized and driven from the Colony. In 1669, Governor Miller, the Royal ruler of the province, was impeached and, with six members of his Council, was imprisoned for two years. The people elected a Governor of their own choosing, called a legislature, appointed courts and exercised all of the rights and powers of government.

### **THE FIRST RESISTANCE TO BRITISH TYRANNY.**

The Colonists declared that "excessive taxation, abridgment of political liberty, with a denial of free election of an assembly, the unwise interruptions of the normal channels of commerce," were the three-fold grievances of the colony. This was the germ of the first principles of free government that ripened more than one hundred years after in the revolution of the Regulators and the Battle of Alamance.

The hauteur of the Royal Governors of the Province and their high-toned temper for royal prerogatives served only to enrage the long-smothered passions of the colonists and to in-



crease their desire to be freed from the overbearing of their supercilious rulers. The people said "it was not the laws, nor the form of government to which they objected, but to the malpractice of all officers from the Governor down." At least a deep settled conviction took hold of the people—that peace could never smile upon the Province of North Carolina while the supremacy of Great Britain endured; multiply all assumptions of superiority, all public tokens of contempt, all enforcements of unpalatable law, all restraints upon provincial commerce, and all espionage upon the brain work which really wrought in behalf of peace, seeking a fair reconciliation, with guarantees of representation of personal rights, and their product represents that incubus whose dead weight rested upon the Colonists of North Carolina.

When the British Parliament asserted the right to tax the Colonists without their consent and passed the "Stamp Act", the people of the colony forcibly expressed their indignation with a unanimity never before equalled.

From one end of the Province to the other meetings were held. They declared they would not submit to the law and they never did. No stamped paper was ever used in the Colony of North Carolina. On Nov. 28th, 1765, the British man-of-war Dilligence, carrying 21 guns, accompanied by the sloop-of-war Viper, with a consignment of stamped paper on board, arrived at Brunswick in the Colony of North Carolina, but her arrival having been anticipated since Oct. 19th, on which date an armed force of 500 people from the eastern Counties, on learning that the Crown had appointed a Royal Stamp Distributor for the Colony and that he was a guest of the Royal Governor, they approached the Governor's mansion and asked to speak with the Stamp Agent. This Governor Tryon refused, whereupon, they made the Governor a prisoner in his own mansion, forcibly arrested the Stamp Distributor, whom they carried before the Mayor of Wilmington and compelled to take oath that he would never offer for sale within the borders of the Province of North Carolina any of the King's stamped paper.

On the arrival of the Dilligence Cols. Waddell and Ashe with 500 men were ready to receive the commanding officer. The idea of resistance of any kind probably never occurred to him, and the suggestion of armed defiance on the part of the





people would have seemed the wildest absurdity to a Commander of His Majesty's warships. The Captain, pacing his deck, as the gallant sloop, with colors flying and all her canvas set, was doubtless anticipating the sideboard and table refreshments that awaited him in the hospitable mansions of the Cape Fear planters, and eager to stand, gun in hand, by one of the tall pines of Brunswick and watch the coming of the antlered monarch of the forest before the inspiring music of the hounds.

As the Dilligence bowls along "with a bone in her mouth" across the ruffled bosom of the beautiful bay into which the river expands opposite Fort Johnson, a puff of white smoke leaps forth from her port quarter, followed by a roar of salutation from one of her guns; an answering thunder of welcome comes from the fort, and the proud ship walks the waters towards the town of Brunswick, eight miles farther up the river towards Wilmington. An hour later she sights the town, and a little while afterwards, with a graceful sweep and a rushing keel, she gradually puts her nose in the wind as if scenting trouble; and then, at the shrill sound of the boatswain's whistle, the growling chains release the anchor from its long suspense, and the Dilligence rests opposite to the Custom House of Brunswick, with her grinning port-holes open and all her guns exposed. Then her rigging-blocks chuckle as she lowers and clews her sails. The Captain soon learned that the militia which lined the shore was not there to do him homage, but to resist the landing of the stamped paper. Cols. Waddell and Ashe confronted the Captain, and with the armed militia at their backs said they would not allow a single piece of stamped paper to be landed and would fire on any one attempting it.

Here was a warship from His Majesty's Navy carrying twenty-one guns openly defied and threatened by the Colonists of North Carolina who were armed and drawn up in battle array. Here was treason, open, flagrant and in broad daylight and led by the most distinguished soldier of the Province and speaker of the General Assembly. This was more than ten years before the National Declaration of Independence, and more than nine years before the Battle of Lexington, and nearly eight years before the "Boston Tea Party." The destruction of tea was accomplished by a party of forty or fifty men disguised as Mohawk Indians, who under cover of darkness, without any resistance, boarded a British merchant



ship containing a consignment of tea, in Boston Harbor, and after throwing the chests of tea overboard, came ashore echoing their bravery, which made the "Boston Tea Party" famous. History blazons it to the four corners of the world, and New Englanders boast of it, until its fame is "pealed and chimed on every tongue of fame". North Carolina's children are taught to read it in their daily lessons; it adorns the picture books of the nurseries and is chronicled by every writer on national history.

Here is an act of the sons of the Province of North Carolina, not committed on a harmless carrier of freight or upon the crew of a merchant vessel; not done under any disguise or mask, but on the representatives of Royalty itself, commanding a man-of-war from King George's navy on the one hand, and upon the King's Royal Governor on the other, both done in the open, broad daylight by men of well-known character and reputation; much more decided in its character, more daring in its action, more important in its results, and yet few of the youths of to-day have ever heard of this exploit.

"These are deeds that should not pass away,  
And names that must not wither, tho' the earth  
Forgets her empires with a just decay,  
The enslavers and enslaved, their death and birth."

Governor Tryon, with unwearied perseverance, earnestly endeavored to propitiate the feelings of the people and their leaders by an ostentatious parade of hospitality. He caused three oxen to be barbecued, a load of bread and several barrels of beer to be provided as a feast for the common people. They attended upon his invitation, but not to participate in, nor to partake of his hospitality, but at a given signal dumped the roasted oxen into the Cape Fear River, burst the barrels and emptied the beer upon the ground. The effect was electrical. The Governor and his suite retired deeply mortified and chagrined. The Captain of the Dilligence espoused the cause of the Royal Governor, the Master of the Viper sided with the Colonists and a general scrimmage resulted in which a relative of the Governor's wife fell in a hand to hand duel with the master of the Viper (Lossing's field book of the Revolution).

The people gave three hearty cheers for the founding of American freedom and quietly dispersed. Here is an act of



North Carolina's sons worthy of all Roman or Grecian fame. It was then that the Governor realized the determined character of the Colonists he had to deal with. With much chagrin and amazement from the insult and mockery heaped upon him, he then and there determined to oppress them the more. His taste for royal prerogatives and desire for luxury were gratified two years later by carrying out his cherished scheme of taxing the Colony to erect a palace, and to successfully accomplish his plans he devoted all the intrigue of the politician and all the boldness of the soldier by taxing the Colony 25,000 pounds sterling—\$125,000 to build his palace at Newberne (Wheeler's History of N. C.). To a people in an infant state of society, with but a few resources, and hardly enough English money in the Colony to pay the legal rate of taxes, this bold determination of the Governor to gratify his royal vanity was as a thorn in the flesh of the people. "The building," says General Miranda of South America, who visited the palace with Judge Martin (Martin's History of N. C.) "was superior to anything of the kind in either North or South America"—the latter, a land of palaces, had nothing equal to it in beauty, finish, or architectural design. But its princely halls, decorated with Italian marble by English artisans, offered little comfort to its vain occupant, for while he was feasting, wining, dining and dancing to the pleasant strains of music, the people were becoming more restless under the yoke of English oppression.

For the next few years the continued extortions of Crown officers from the Governor down to the lowest court bailiffs was the worst system of extortion, oppression and fraud that any people ever suffered. County clerks in many sections were charging and demanding as much as from three to four pounds sterling for issuing a marriage license. When you compute the relative value of money at that period, with the value of money to-day, its purchasing power would be more than double. Think, then, of the poor people of that day and generation being forced to give up fifty or sixty dollars as a prerequisite to having the nuptial knot tied. Many good men and women are said to have dispensed with a license altogether, and simply announced publicly that they had taken each other "for better or worse," unofficially "just so" and were as much married in the sight of God as if they had complied





with all legal formalities and had a priest to officiate (Lossing's Field Book of the Revolution, vol. 2, page 570.)

On one occasion, while the Sheriff of Orange County, accompanied by his deputies and bodyguard, all well armed, was on a tax collecting tour in the immediate vicinity of the present site of the University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill,—distraint and selling the property of every man who did not pay the amount of taxes demanded—he came to the home of a poor settler. On learning that the husband was away, and not finding anything in the house to satisfy his demands, he determined not to leave empty-handed. Observing that the settler's wife was wearing a new homespun dress, which she had spun, woven and made with her own hands, he sold it under the hammer to the highest bidder, to satisfy her husband's taxes—then tore it from her back, and with a slap of his hand told her to go and make another. (The Old North State, by Caruthers, page 21-22).

In many instances the farmer's work horse was taken from the plough to satisfy the sheriff's demands for taxes; in others, the farmer was thrown into jail and his crops ruined for want of attention. The continued extortions of sheriffs and other county officers led to the assembling of the people to discuss the abuses of power, seeking redress for their grievances. At last, the people determined not to pay the taxes demanded by the sheriffs, but instead placed the exact amount of taxes lawfully due in the hands of their representative of the General Assembly. On the opening of the Assembly, when this member's name was called, Governor Tryon, in haughty tone, demanded the reason "why the King's subjects in his district had refused to pay their taxes." Answering "Aye" to his name he strode towards the speaker's desk with the firmness, plainness and boldness of the Quaker—for he was of this persuasion—and tossed a bag of specie on the table in front of the Governor, and replied, "Here, sir, are the taxes my people refused your roguish sheriffs. I brought it down to keep it from dwindling, seeing that when money passes through so many fingers, it, like a cake of soap, grows less at each handling. The people have sent it down by their Commoner and I am ready to pay it over to the treasurer if he will issue receipts to show that the taxes have been paid". (Caruthers Life of Caldwell, and Some Neglected History of N. C.) The Com-



moner was one of those independent Quakers who refused to pull off his hat and bow before the minions of despotism, in consequence of which he shared the contempt of the Governor, at whose command the Chief Justice, sitting at the Governor's left, issued a warrant for the Quaker's arrest and had him thrown into prison, where he remained until the Governor learned that a band of the Commoner's constituents about 2000 strong, armed to the teeth, were marching on the Capital. (Col. Rec. of N. C., vol. 8, page 500).

Governor Tryon at once issued a proclamation making it unlawful for more than ten persons to meet together, at any one time or place; but the people paid little attention to the Royal Governor's edict. They continued their meetings and perfected an organization, binding themselves together as Regulators under an iron-bound oath of allegiance (Col. Rec. of N. C. vol. 7, page 726). The Regulators held joint meetings with the county officials who agreed to return all taxes which had been unlawfully extorted. Their promises, however, were like the proverbial pie-crust easily broken, as promises were all the poor downtrodden people ever received. This condition of affairs gradually grew worse and worse, and at last the Regulators—from time to time—presented eleven petitions to the Governor and General Assembly, begging and imploring redress for grievances (Some Neglected History of N. C., pages 100-164), declaring that if the grievances were redressed it "would heal the bleeding wounds of the Province; would conciliate the minds of the poor petitioners to every just measure of government; would make the laws what the constitution declared they should be: their protection and not their bane; and would cause joy and gladness, glee and prosperity to diffusively spread throughout every quarter of this extensive Province from Virginia to the South and from the Atlantic to the Western hills. These petitions bore the signatures of more than five hundred people and were fortified with precise specification of acts of extortion, confirmed in each instance by oath. In reply, the Governor made valuable promises of restitution, only to break his word (Some Neglected History of N. C.). It was perfectly natural that this sturdy minded middle class with honorable character, respected homes, country gentlemen—proprietors of



their own holdings, seeing the darkening clouds of oppression gradually growing deeper and darker, with critical eye, began to look for relief from such a formidable future, and they thought as well as looked. At last, when oppression from State and County officers became no longer endurable, they determined to give their energy and manhood, if need be, to suppress it. Redress was first sought in the courts. They brought indictments for extortion against the county clerks and sheriffs. In almost every instance the officials were found guilty and sentenced to pay a fine of one penny and costs, which the court remitted. The Regulators did not consider the punishment sufficient for the crime, and at once realized that any recourse to the courts would end only in a mockery of justice (Some Neglected History of N. C., page 167-176).

At this wholesale miscarriage of justice, the Regulators assembled in the Court House yard at Hillsborough under the leadership of their Quaker commoner, and forcibly entered the Court, then in session, dragged out several of the attorneys and publicly whipped them on the Court House common; after which they urged the Judge to proceed with the docket, but he adjourned court till the next day. During the night the Judge quietly mounted his horse and rode away. When the Regulators learned that the Judge had left the docket unfinished they went into the Court House, appointed a clerk, set up a "mock" judge and compelled Edward Fanning, the duly appointed clerk, who was also a lawyer, to plead in his official capacity and thus furnish the docket (Lossing's Field Book of the Revolution, vol. II, page 575). County Clerk Fanning had been so overbearing in his dealings with and so insulting his demeanor towards them, that they dragged him from the court room heels first, down the court-house steps in the yard where they tied him to a tree and gave him a severe flogging, after which they demolished his fine house, broke up his costly furniture, and would have burned the house but were afraid the wind might cause the fire to spread to adjoining property.

A few lines from a poem by the Poet Laureate of the Regulators will serve to show the character of Fanning, who—though a college bred man and the son of wealthy parents—is represented as a weary pauper when first coming into North





Carolina and before receiving his appointment from Governor Tryon.

“When Fanning first to Orange came,  
He looked both pale and wan;  
An old patched coat was on his back,  
An old gray mare he rode on.  
Both man and mare wan't worth five pounds,  
As I've been often told;  
But, by his civil robberies,  
He's lined his coat with gold.”

(Col. Rec. of N. C., vol. 7, pg. 507.)

The attitude of the Royal Governors toward the people of the Province of North Carolina had always been like that of the “Father of the faithful” driving the Colonists “Hagar-like” in to the wilderness there to pine and perish from extortion and oppression. It was nothing more to expect, then, that the yeomanry of the land “like Ishmael of old” should be ready to raise their hands against every form of oppression. The God of Abraham protected the exiles and blessed them with fair and fruitful lands. The promise was also unto them “to help in the making of a great nation.” In those days when 2000 or more men banded themselves together for a noble purpose against a common wrong, their influence for good was felt, and be it said to their credit, the deliberations of the Regulators were orderly and peaceful, yet information reached Governor Tryon through Fanning, who had repeatedly stated, “that he wanted revenge and revenge he would have.” He dispatched an express to the Governor saying, “the Regulators have raised a body of 2000 men and are preparing to march on Hillsboro and lay it in ashes. They are a menace to the country and must be subdued.” He then urged the Governor to lose no time in subduing the revolutionists with the military under his command. (Col. & Rev. Rec. of N. C., vol. 8, page 645.)

### THE FIRST BATTLE OF THE REVOLUTION.

Governor Tryon, on the receipt of Fanning's dispatch, lost no time in making preparations for warfare. He at once issued a circular letter to his Colonels in all the Counties where the Regulators were not predominant, ordering them to equip their regiments and get ready for immediate service. On May 1st, 1771, Tryon began to march toward the Regulator's country



with a well drilled army of 1000 men all well officered, including artillery, consisting of two field pieces, 6 swivel guns mounted on carriages, and 2 six pounders, cavalry, infantry and rangers with a wagon train of supplies and munitions of war. During his march to the westward his ranks were daily increased by detachments.

Before leaving the seat of government, Gov. Tryon sent an express to Charleston, S. C., requesting three wagon loads of munitions of war, powder, flints, blankets and other material for the quartermaster's department. He also ordered a detachment of 250 men commanded by his most trustworthy Colonel to march to the westward, collect forces from the western counties and rendezvous between Salisbury and Charlotte, there to await the convoy from Charleston with the supplies for his army. When the convoy was encamped the Regulators captured and destroyed the entire outfit. (Hunter's sketch of Western N. C., page 158-62, and Some Neglected History of N. C.)

The Colonel in command of Tryon's western detachment soon received intelligence of the destruction by the Regulators of the King's wagon-train containing the munitions of war for Tryon's army. He at once decided to rejoin Tryon's army and sent a courier with information of the capture, and took up a line of march in the direction of Hillsboro; but had advanced only a short distance when he was surrounded by Regulators and most of his command captured, whereupon he again dispatched couriers to Tryon informing him of his plight. Gov. Tryon, who was already alarmed from reports that the Regulators were concentrating their forces on the banks of the Alamance on the Salisbury road, immediately raised camp and begun marching toward the enemy.

On May 14th, Tryon's whole army crossed over and encamped on the west bank of the Great Alamance—there to await the arrival of his western detachment. He had a well officered army with which to attack the Regulators, who were not organized for warfare. The latter had no military organization, no commander in chief, no officers, cavalry nor artillery. They were familiar with the rifle and were men of undaunted courage, beyond which they had none of the qualifications of soldiers. The Regulators, numbering about 2000 men only half of whom bore arms, were encamped on the Salisbury road



five miles from the British camp and near where the battle was fought.

On Thursday morning, May 16th, 1771, Tryon's army, flying the British flag, as per orders issued the evening before, was marching at daybreak, but without the beat of drums, hoping to creep upon the Regulators unawares. The Governor, mounted upon a handsome white charger, led his army, which marched in military order. When nearing the Regulators—who were alert and watching for the enemy—he halted and sent his aid-de-camp with a proclamation issued the evening before, declaring the Regulators outlaws, and demanding that they lay down their arms, surrender themselves and their leaders to the leniency of the government. (Col. & Rev. Rec. of N. C., vol. 8, page 642.)

The Governor's aid was told: "Go and tell Billy Tryon that we will fight for our principles." The opposing forces were now marching towards each other, and, as Robert Thompson, an unarmed non-combatant, who had been to plead with Tryon for the Regulators, started to return, the aid delivered the message from the Regulators, which irritated the Governor. In an unguarded moment he snatched a rifle from a private and with his own hand shot and killed Thompson. He instantly perceived his folly and returned his aid with a white flag. The bearer had proceeded only a few steps when the Regulators began firing with deadly aim. The flag fell, but whether the aid was killed, is not known. The Governor was enraged, and, rising in his stirrups, he cried out "Fire! fire! fire on them or fire on me!" he commanded. "Fire and be damned!" cried a Regulator and the din of battle began in earnest.

The followers of the British flag obeyed the command of the General and opened fire on the Americans. At the beginning the British seemed to be getting the worst of the situation. (Caruthers Life of Caldwell, page 185). The Regulators were fighting from behind trees, fences, rocks and any other object that furnished the least protection; while Tryon's forces were firing in platoons. His men in the open field made splendid targets for the Regulator sharpshooters. It is said that one of the sharpshooters lay behind a ledge of rock with three companions to load for him and killed fifteen of Tryon's artillery men. (Some Neglected History of N. C.)





At last Capt. Montgomery led a charge against Tryon's artillery, routed the gunners and captured two small cannon, one of which is now used on "Fourth of July" celebrations at Burlington, N. C. Soon after the capture of the cannon a Regulator's bullet whizzed through General Tryon's hat, whereupon the Governor sent out another white flag towards the enemy, which fell from the hand of the aid, who also fell with a regulator's bullet in his brain. (Footes History of N. C., page 61). After some moments the Governor rallied his men and with redoubled volleys closed in upon the Regulators, whose ammunition was now getting low, as they only had as many bullets as they were accustomed to take along for a day's hunting. (Some Neglected History of N. C., page 232). Later the Regulators were forced to retreat and about two dozen or more of their number were taken prisoners by Tryon's army.

Gideon Wright, one of the men who fought under Tryon, in his report to the Moravians (Moravian Records at Salem, N. C.), says: "Many of the wounded Regulators left on the battlefield suffered an ignominious death at the hands of the Governor, who ordered the woods set on fire and in consequence the wounded who could not crawl out of danger or that were not rescued by comrades were literally roasted to death." Williamson in his History says: "The engagement lasted nearly three hours. The Regulators' losses, killed and wounded, were between seventy and eighty men." Martin, in his history says: "The King's loss was about 100 men killed and wounded." According to a statement in Williamson's History (vol. 2, page 276), which was taken, probably, from official communications, Tryon's loss was greater than he reported. Immediately after the battle Tryon hanged as traitors several of the captured Regulators, the balance (30) he dragged around as "scarecrows" through the Regulators' country—on his march of devastation—pillaging with torch and sword, disarming the inhabitants, burning their buildings and laying waste all growing crops, in addition to levying contributions of beef and flour for his army.

Thus ended the "Battle of Alamance." It was here that the first blood was shed in resistance to exactions of English rulers and oppression by the government of Great Britain; here is where the first patriots defied an army flying the



British flag and gave up their blood for the founding of American Liberty and Independence. From the blood shed on the "Battlefield at Alamance," from the very grass which covers the graves of the heroic dead, sprung the glorious flower of freedom which now flourishes and blossoms in all its magnificent splendor throughout this great Republic.

The "Battle of Alamance" and not the battle of Lexington, as is usually taught, was the first battle of the American Revolution. For the sake of comparison we will call to mind the little skirmish that took place on Lexington Green, on April 19th, 1775, just one day less than four years after the Battle of Alamance. The American militia under Capt. Parker, numbered about seventy men. The British, led by Maj. Pitcairn, outnumbered the Americans. This British officer galloped up, shouted to the Americans: "Disperse ye rebels!" They showed fight and he ordered his men to fire; and the engagement was on. The skirmish lasted thirty minutes, with a loss to the Americans of four killed and seven wounded, while the British loss was one man killed, three men and a horse wounded.

Compare the utterances and the deeds of the men at Alamance with those of the men of Lexington. They at Lexington instructed their representatives to demand radical and lasting redress for grievances. On the village green at Lexington free born Americans swore to combat manfully their birthright and inheritance of liberty. On the greensward at Alamance the Regulators counting themselves free born, gave full proof of their resolve to know and enjoy the liberty which they had inherited, and they did it four years before it was dreamed of at Lexington. Word chimes with word, deed harmonizes with deed, the same spirit of freedom, ready to die for liberty, breathes in both. The Revolution of the Regulators was the beginning, and the Revolutionary war the ending, of, one and the same war against the oppression of the British government.

The Revolution of the Regulators at the Battle of Alamance sharpened the sensibilities and instilled into the intellect of the Mecklenburgers the determination to be free and independent, which led to the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence, the first Declaration for American Liberty. It is an indisputable historic fact that the Province of North



Carolina was the first of the thirteen colonies to openly resist and later, cast off the British yoke, and, relying on the truth and justice of her cause, and with the help of the God of David, she threw the gauntlet—Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence—of defiance in the teeth of the Goliath power of England.

### **THE FIRST DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE.**

Early in May, 1775, the people of Mecklenburg moved, in their sovereign capacity, the question of Independence, and took a much bolder step and more decided stand than either the Colonial or Continental Congress had as yet attempted; and while this step evinces the spirit of that chivalric county, it is one of the boasted recollections of the "Old North State," ever to be cherished, never to be forgotten. A letter having been sent to the commanders of each militia district calling a convention in Charlotte, N. C., for the 19th and 20th of May, 1775, on the day appointed the people began pouring into Charlotte, and at the hour designated the convention assembled in the Court house and proceeded to business. Abraham Alexander was called to the chair, and John McKnitt Alexander was appointed secretary. The convention was addressed by several professional gentlemen and it is said "they spoke clearly to the people, setting before them in plain terms the causes which were at the foundation of the differences between the colonies and the mother country, and the consequences which the people would continue to suffer if they failed to make firm resistance to England's claim to tax the colonies without their having any choice in the matter. A committee, previously appointed with Dr. Ephraim Brevard as chairman, after remaining out till after midnight, came into the court house with the resolutions of Independence, which were unanimously agreed upon by the convention. The convention then adjourned till the next day at noon, when Col. Tom Polk mounted the court house steps and read the Resolutions from the pen of Dr. Ephraim Brevard, as follows:

### **THE MECKLENBURG DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE.**

1. Resolved: That whosoever directly or indirectly abets, or in any way, form or manner countenances the unchartered and dangerous invasion of our rights, as claimed by Great Britain, is an enemy to this country—to America and to the inherent and unalienable rights of man.





2. Resolved: That we do hereby declare ourselves a free and independent people; are, and of right ought to be a sovereign and self-governing association, under the control of no power, other than that of our God and the general government of the Congress: To the maintenance of which independence we solemnly pledge to each other our mutual co-operation, **Our Lives, Our Fortunes, and Our Most Sacred Honor.**

3. Resolved: That as we acknowledge the existence and control of no law or legal officer, civil or military, within this county, we do hereby ordain and adopt as a rule of life, all, each, and every one of our former laws, wherein, nevertheless, the Crown of Great Britain never can be considered as holding rights, privileges, or authorities therein.

4. Resolved: That all, each, and every military officer in this county is hereby reinstated in his former command and authority, he acting conformably to their regulations. And that every member present of this delegation, shall henceforth be a civil officer, viz: A justice of the peace, in the character of a committee man, to issue process, hear, and determine all matters of controversy, according to said adopted laws, and to preserve peace, union, and harmony in said county, to use every exertion to spread the love of country and fire of freedom throughout America, until a more general and organized government be established in this Province.

Abraham Alexander, Chairman,

John McKnitt Alexander, Secretary,

Ephraim Brevard,  
Hezekiah J. Balch,  
John Phifer,  
James Harris,  
William Kennon,  
John Ford,  
Richard Barry,  
Henry Downe,  
Ezra Alexander,  
William Graham,  
John Queary,  
Hezekiah Alexander,  
Charles Alexander,

Zaccheus Wilson,  
Waightstill Avery,  
Benjamin Patton,  
Matthew McClure,  
Neil Morrison,  
Robert Irvin,  
John Flennege,  
David Esese,  
John Davidson,  
Richard Harris,  
Thomas Polk, Sr.,  
Adam Alexander.

During the reading all was death-like stillness. Every eye was fixed on the tall form, every ear open to the full, deep-toned voice of Colonel Thomas Polk. When he finished, all





drew a long breath; each man looked into his neighbor's eye and saw the fire gleaming there. A voice from the assembled multitude called out "Three cheers!" and then, from every man, woman and child there went up such a shout as was never before heard in Mecklenburg. The deed was done: these men had pledged their all—lives, fortunes, honor, and, as true as steel, from that hour, they never shrank from meeting that pledge. The people returned to their homes and avocations, taught by their leaders to expect trouble, and to be ready to answer their country's summons at a moment's warning.

Four copies of the Declaration were made; the original was kept by the secretary. A copy was sent by express to the Continental Congress then in session at Philadelphia; one was sent to the Provincial Congress at Hillsboro, and another was sent to the Cape Fear Mercury—the only newspaper published in the Colony—and appeared in this paper on Friday, June 3rd, 1775.

The State of North Carolina has enacted that the 20th of May be observed as a legal holiday, in honor of the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence—the Kohinoor of gems in America's historical crown.

### THE STATE OF FRANKLIN.

The defeat of the Regulators at the "Battle of Alamance" did not quench their desire for liberty nor their determination to be free and Independent. On the other hand it produced still greater dissatisfaction with the existing regime of extortionate persecution and illegal fees demanded by Crown officers and their deputies. Like a mammoth more than eight thousand of them shook off the "Yoke of British Oppression," sold their lands, gathered together their families and household goods into wagons and crossed over the mountains into the Cherokee Country, escaping for all time further persecution at the hands of the English tyrants. Remote from the seat of power and free from Regal oppression these honest hearted, virtuous patriots found a welcome in the land of the Cherokees. Thus the misgoverned Province of North Carolina sent forth eight thousand emigrants to the Cherokee Country; the poor in search of independence; others to regain broken fortunes; and aspiring to attain respectability unattainable in the land of their nativity. The land beyond the mountains offered them



at least exemption from the supercilious annoyances of haughty officers, who claimed pre-eminence above them. Others came for the broader purpose of laying a deep foundation for a free government of and by the people, and of acquiring, under it, distinction for themselves and posterity. This army of new comers bought of the Cherokee chiefs all of the eastern portion of their country—now the eastern half of the present state of Tennessee—bordering on the western boundary of the Province of North Carolina, where they set to work to erect for themselves a free government.

The settlers for the first few months were without laws or protection, save simple regulations of their own adoption; but later, under the wise counsels of John Sevier and other leading spirits, they drew up laws for their government which were paternal and patriarchal, simple and moderate, but summary and firm, which sufficed for the first few years. Later, a Declaration of Rights and Regular Constitution provided for a government in all its departments, Legislative, Executive and Judicial; a House of Representatives and General Assembly, which convened and enacted: that the Commonwealth be known as the "**State of Franklin.**" The General Assembly then elected as Governor of the New State, Col. John Sevier. Greenville (now Tennessee) was made the capitol of the "**State of Franklin.**" Here was the seat of government, where the Governor met his councils, and projected and matured his foreign and domestic relations.

The Governor of the State of Franklin, besides having trouble with the Indians, had opposition in his own government. In a luckless hour, in the fall of 1788, there arose those who, for unknown reasons, turned their allegiance to the State of their nativity, forsaking their grand and noble leader, Col. John Sevier. In Oct., 1788, the State of North Carolina had a bench warrant issued against Governor John Sevier for high treason. The warrant was placed in the hands of the Governor's arch enemy, Capt. Tifton, who, by strategy, arrested and spirited Sevier across the mountains to Morganton, N. C., and lodged him in jail. Had the destroying angel passed through the land, and destroyed the first born in every section, the feelings of the hardy frontiersmen would not have been more incensed; had the chiefs and warriors of the whole Cherokee nation fallen upon and butchered the defenceless settlers, the



feeling of retaliation and revenge would not have been more deeply awakened in their bosoms.

The news of the Governor's arrest spread over the mountain principality with almost the quickness of thought. That night and all next day, from the east, west, north and south the hardy pioneers poured into the "Capital"—thousands of infuriated men. They shouted threats and imprecations on Tifton and North Carolina. At last cooler heads counselled and a bold stroke was decided on. A band of less than a dozen men, including two of the Governor's sons, soon left in hot pursuit. They crossed the mountains, determined to rescue their beloved leader or leave their bones to bleach upon the hills of Western North Carolina. It was learned that the trial was to take place at Morganton, in Western Northern Carolina and thither this daring band, with relays of fresh horses rapidly journeyed. Their plan was to obtain the Governor's release by strategy, if possible. If not successful in this, then they were determined to burn the town, and storm the jail while the confusion over the fire held the people's attention. When the rescuing party reached Morganton, court was in session, with the prisoner before the bar of justice. The members of the rescuing party mixed with the crowd and easily passed off as strangers attracted by common curiosity. The leader entered the court room and, as his eye met the gaze of Sevier, the Governor knew at once that rescue was at hand, but neither betrayed his thoughts. During a pause in the proceedings, the leader of the rescuing party stepped in front of the Judge and said "Judge, you are through with that man," pointing to Sevier. In the meantime Sevier had caught a glimpse of his favorite saddle horse standing nonchalantly at the court house door with the bridle rein carelessly thrown across the saddle. Taking advantage of the confusion caused by the stranger interrupting the court, Sevier sprang to the door, thence into the saddle and with the rapidity of thought his brave followers joined him and triumphantly carried him back to the "State of Franklin."

Thus we see that the State of Franklin was the immediate offspring of the Revolution of the Regulators, culminating in the Battle of Alamance, and their independence was a reality before it was dreamed of elsewhere. In the little commonwealth of the "State of Franklin," the British flag was never





unfurled, and no British officer ever trod the soil. They paid tribute to no government on earth except their own. Here an outraged people, outlawed and oppressed by British tyranny, set to the people of the new world the dangerous example of erecting themselves into a state, separate and distinct from, and independent of, the authority of the English Crown; where they enjoyed Freedom, that twin sister of Virtue, the brightest of all the spirits that descend in the train of religion from the throne of God, leading man up again to the early glories of his being, the Angel from whose presence happiness spreads like the sunrise over the darkness of the land, at the moving of whose sceptre knowledge, peace, fortitude and wisdom descend, at the voice of whose trumpet more than British tyranny is broken and all men are free and equal.

No. 320 Manhattan Ave.



# COLONIAL LEGENDS AND FOLK LORE



"STEADFAST FOR GOD AND COUNTRY"

AN ADDRESS BY  
HON. JOHN C. COLEMAN,  
State Attorney of the New York Society of the Order  
DELIVERED BEFORE  
THE NEW YORK SOCIETY  
OF THE  
ORDER OF THE FOUNDERS AND  
PATRIOTS OF AMERICA  
AT THE HOTEL MANHATTAN, NEW YORK

JANUARY 20, 1910



## COLONIAL LEGENDS AND FOLK LORE.

It can safely be asserted that we are living in practical and unsentimental days. Most of us are too busily occupied to have time to think of more than the immediate present, its needs and its pleasures. The whole spirit of the present day press and literature seems against any superstition, any spiritual manifestation of anything which is ordinarily concealed from the gaze of men. And yet, in spite of all this, we carry with us, in a subconscious way perhaps, the knowledge that between us and the unseen there is but a thin veil, which at any moment may be drawn aside and bring us face to face with actualities. And this feeling manifests itself in many small, sometimes ridiculous, sometimes pathetic ways.

We are asked if our health is good, and before replying we knock wood. We are afraid to open an umbrella in the house, or break a mirror, lest some one may die before the week end. We do not whistle or sing before seven, lest we cry before eleven; and we cut our hair in the time of the new moon, so that it may grow with the growth of that reflected luminary. We eagerly follow the revelations of a Palladino, and you can find scarcely a person who does not confess to more or less intimacy with the spiritual world and its inhabitants—the old pagan being still in us.

If such a condition of mind can exist in a day when news travels by electricity, and is capable of easy and accurate ascertainment as to its truth or falsity, can we wonder that, in an earlier day and generation, when news went mainly by word of mouth, when books were mostly in the scanty library of the village minister or lawyer, superstition, twin sister of ignorance, ran riot in the land?

I have chosen two or three manifestations of somewhat singular and grave import to dwell on for a few moments tonight, not because they are particularly novel, but because they bring out the point of what I have just been speaking.

In the year 1696, in the town of East Salem, Massachusetts, there lived a somewhat uncouth and coarse minister, named



Parris. In his family were two servants, a negro, named John Indian, and his wife, half Indian and half negro, named Tituba. These two were superstitious slaves, who were deeply steeped in the mysticism of Voodooism. Throughout the countryside the idea of demoniacal possession was firmly fixed in the minds of people. The Devil was a real and veritable person, who was continually arraying himself against the powers of good, and, by entering into the bodies of his chosen people, they became the vehicles of his plans to overthrow these powers.

He very often attacked the young, and the female sex was particularly susceptible to his assaults.

Eleven young women of Salem were in the habit of visiting John Indian and Tituba, and listening to their weird songs and crooning incantations.

These girls ranged in age from nine to twenty-two. Very shortly after these seances had begun they began to be, as they said, possessed of spirits. They were called "the afflicted children" and their wonderful and ghastly work has come down to this day as the "Salem Witchcraft Horrors."

Partly owing to ignorance and superstition, and partly to the arrogance and severity of Minister Parris, the village was rent into factions, ready, as Fiske says, "to fly at each others throats", a spectacle which the Devil must have contemplated with sincerest satisfaction.

In this crisis "the afflicted children" began their devils' work. Elizabeth Parris, aged nine, and Abigail Williams, aged eleven, were two of the loudest and most prominent. In the meeting house, when the Minister announced the text, they would howl out and cry "Your text is too long," "Shorten it," etc.

They learned to gyrate as they screamed, to hold their breath until black in the face, and various other similar tricks. But no one dared check them, for, as they said, "they were possessed and must not be interfered with", and they were regarded with holy awe. Later, when one bold man said "the little hussies should be cudgelled," he was denounced, tried and hanged.





The good men of the town thought that Satan, having fought God in the Old World, was making a fight for supremacy in the New, and if they maintained a bold front against him, he would be exorcised and flee. So they allowed the afflicted children to roam at large and to carry out their dreadful plans practically without hindrance. Pointing their fingers at certain godly men and women who invariably belonged to the opposite faction, they fell into hysterical denunciation of them as witches, as persons who had appeared to them at night, and who had tried to force them to write in a book called the devil's autograph book, etc. etc.

Incredible as it may seem, these persons so denounced were arrested and held in jail for trial. These wretched children spared no one, no matter how high her estate, or how godly his calling. Goodwives, Nurse and Easty, Minister Burroughs, a Harvard graduate, Giles Corey and Martha, his sweet wife, alike fell under the ban of these shrieking imps, and no previous good character could save them. When the trials came on, the accusers fell foaming at the mouth to the floor, their antics were redoubled, and the prisoners were really convicted when they entered the box. Over one hundred and twenty-six persons were actually lodged in jail, nineteen were hanged, and one died in prison from ill treatment. Giles Corey, the man of iron, was confronted by the judge, and ordered to confess, so that his property might be confiscated. He refused to talk and heavy wood beams were placed upon his chest until he was crushed to death. The legend runs that he came back at stated times to Salem where he had suffered, to announce some calamity to the town, and his ghost frightened many a child. An anonymous ballad perpetuates the cruel end of this man done to death by an eleven year old girl.

Giles Corey was a Wizzard strong,  
A stubborn wretch was he;  
And fitt was he to hang on high  
Upon the Locust-tree.



So when before the magistrates  
For Triall he did come,  
He would no true confession make.  
But was compleatlie dumbe.

"Giles Corey", said the Magistrate,  
"What hast thou here to pleade  
To these that now accuse thy soule  
Of crimes and horrid deed?"

Giles Corey, he said not a worde,  
No single worde spoke he.  
"Giles Corey", saith the Magistrate,  
"We'll press it out of thee."

They got them then a heavy beam,  
They laid it on his breast;  
They loaded it with heavy stones,  
And hard upon him prest.

"More weight!" now said this wretched man;  
"More weight!" again he cried;  
And he did no confession make,  
But wickedly he dyed.

Prior to the year 1646 the Colony of New Haven had been known mainly as a trading colony, and had on the whole prospered as such. The ancestors of the shrewd Yankee of the later day, had turned over and turned over their wares until they had attained prosperity. In that year, however, it was decided to embark upon the greatest mercantile adventure yet attempted in the New World—to man and equip a great ship and send her to England with the best stores with which the Colony could fill her hold. A vessel, of, for that day, enormous size, whose lines were said to have been laid in Rhode Island, was purchased, Captain Lambertson, the leading navigator of the Colony, selected as her Com-



mander, and into her was put the gathered wealth of the Colony—all the eggs, alas, in one basket. Many of the inhabitants seized the opportunity of revisiting England to return with the ship, and all went merry as a marriage bell. True, Captain Lamberton said the great ship was “cranky” and the Reverend Davenport, the minister, prayed sadly as the ship set sail in the dark winter days of 1646 that the dear souls on board might be brought safely home, but these forebodings were lost sight of in the thought of the wealth she would bring back and the increased power that the Colony would gain thereby.

The winter passed and the summer came, but no returning ship brought word of sight of Captain Lamberton. Hope turned to despair, sorrow looked into the door, and bankruptcy seemed not far off. Another winter, and still the dim horizon showed no tall spars and snowy sails, and all hope vanished. But there were some who prayed that it might be vouchsafed to them to know before they died what manner of death their friends had met, by fire, by flood, or by savage foes.

One windy June afternoon in the following summer a watcher on the pier saw a great ship sailing towards the shore in a cloud raised above his head. Shouting he called his neighbors, and they knew that it was their own “great ship”. On her decks were Lamberton and their loved ones, and they were growing nearer—nearer—when as they looked, before their very faces, the mast fell, the sails dropped from their places and the ship capsized and vanished. Rushing to Mr. Davenport they were told to be comforted, since this was the way the Divine Power had chosen to tell them of the manner in which their friends had been lost.

A ship sailed from New Haven;  
And the keen and frosty airs,  
That filled her sails at parting,  
Were heavy with good men's prayers.

.....





But Master Lamberton muttered,  
And under his breath said he,  
"This ship is so cranky and walty,  
I fear our grave she will be!"  
.....

And at last their prayers were answered:  
It was in the month of June,  
An hour before the sunset  
Of a windy afternoon,

When, steadily steering landward,  
A ship was seen below,  
And they knew it was Lamberton, Master,  
Who sailed so long ago.

On she came with a cloud of canvas.  
Right against the wind that blew,  
Until the eye could distinguish  
The faces of the crew.

Then fell her straining topmasts.  
Hanging tangled in the shrouds,  
And her sails were loosened and lifted,  
And blown away like clouds.

And the masts, with all their rigging,  
Fell slowly, one by one,  
And the hulk dilated and vanished,  
As a sea-mist in the sun!

And the people who saw this marvel  
Each said unto his friend,  
That this was the mould of their vessel,  
And thus her tragic end.



Another interesting story of early New Haven days deals with Tryon's invasion of the Elm City. Old Napthali Daggett had been President of Yale College and had retired to pass his last days in peace and comfort. One hot July morning in 1779 word was brought that the British were on the march from West Haven to burn and destroy New Haven. Mounting his old black mare and taking his long flintlock musket Napthali rode hastily to a point on the road where he could command a view of the enemy, and shortly after was discovered calmly loading and firing at the advancing Hessians. As they came nearer and surrounded the venerable educator, one of them angrily said, "Here, you old fool, why are you firing on His Majesty's forces?" "Exercising the right of war", said the learned president. "If I let you go this time, will you ever fire on them again?". "Nothing more likely", was the quick retort.

We need more such men like Giles Corey and Napthali Daggett.

"Oh God for a man with heart, head, hand,  
Like some of the simple great ones  
Gone forever and ever by.  
One still strong man in a blatant land,  
Whatever they call him—what care I?  
Aristocrat, democrat, autocrat, one  
Who can rule and dare not lie."

A Colonial romance of New Hampshire gives our thoughts a lighter turn, and is not unlike the old story of King Cophetua and the beggar maid.

Governor Benning Wentworth lived in Little Harbor, New Hampshire, where he received visits of ceremony and gave great dinners, having his personal guard, his stud of horses and the best wine cellar in the Province. His house contained half a hundred apartments, all of which he used when the Honorable Council met to make a levy of troops for Louisburg, or upon other matters of Colonial importance.



It was a pleasant mansion, an abode  
Near and yet hidden from the great high-road,  
Sequestered among trees, a noble pile,  
Baronial and colonial in its style;  
Gables and dormer-windows everywhere,  
And stacks of chimneys rising high in air.

.....

Within, unwonted splendors met the eye,  
Panels, and floors of oak, and tapestry;  
Carved chimney-pieces, where on brazen dogs  
Revelled and roared the Christmas fires of logs.

This beautiful establishment lacked one thing, and that was a fair lady to preside over it. The Governor's wife had died, and as he had no children, he determined to marry again. This time the saucy, red-lipped Martha Hilton caught his fancy. She is first seen a girl of fifteen, bare-foot, carrying a pail of water freshly drawn from the town pump. The sight of her so dressed caused the good dame of the Inn to call out "How dare you go looking so? You ought to be ashamed to be seen in the street." The girl tossed her head and airily exclaimed: "I shall ride in my chariot yet, Ma'am," One day the Governor gave a splendid banquet, and the company is assembled:—

He had invited all his friends and peers,  
The Pepperells, the Langdons, and the Lears,  
The Sparhawks, the Penhallows, and the rest;  
For why repeat the name of every guest?

and among the red-coats is the black-coat of the Rev. Arthur Brown, Rector of the Episcopal Church. The dinner is served, the wine flows freely. The Governor whispers to a servant, who is followed by Martha Hilton blushing and sweet, who appears before the company, taking her stand before the front of the fireplace.



Can this be Martha Hilton? It must be!  
Yes, Martha Hilton, and no other she!  
Dowered with the beauty of her twenty years,  
How ladylike, how queenlike, she appears!

She is beautifully dressed and all the guests admire the handsome girl. The Governor, rising from the chair, goes over to Martha and addressing himself to the clergyman says: "Mr. Brown, I wish you to marry me." "To whom?" says the bewildered rector. "To this lady." The rector was so dumbfounded that he was silent; thereupon the irascible old Governor said: "Sir, as the Governor of His Majesty's Province of New Hampshire, I command you to marry me." The ceremony was performed. The bride of 20 married the man of 60, and thus her saucy answer, so long ago, came true; and she rides in the Governor's chariot of state.

We are proud to-day of our submarines and torpedo boats, and we regard them with mingled awe and wonder. The following half legend and half truth shows that their use was appreciated at a comparatively early day.

The story is told of a Connecticut officer named Bushnell, who was in the Revolutionary War, and who invented during his college days a machine for submarine explosives. General Putnam heard of Bushnell, and after conferring with him ordered a machine. It was a queer looking arrangement when made, and in the front was an air-tight apartment supposed to hold enough air for an hour's work. The bottom was ballasted with lead. The torpedo was fixed in the rear and was provided with a strong screw that could be turned by the operator and fastened under the bottom of the ship to be attacked. Bushnell's brother "Long Bije", being a venturesome New London sailor who had courage enough to undertake anything, offered to go if he could be primed with rum and tobacco, which he deemed the leading necessities of life.

It was a hot July day. Everything was in readiness for the start. The "American Turtle", as it was called, was to be towed into the stream, and then Abijah was to try





his skill and bring the affair under Admiral Howe's flag ship, "The Eagle". Abijah stepped on board, entered the air-tight chamber, closed the cover, and was about to screw it down when his head popped up and he said: "Thunder and marling spikes. Who's got a cud of tobacco? The old one won't last anyhow." The crowd felt in vain, but no one had the weed. Time was short and "Long Bijé" muttering "It's too bad. If the Turtle don't do her duty, it's all along of me going to sea without my tobacco." The officers and General Putnam hurried to the Battery where they waited for an hour in great suspense. As the sun rose they saw the "Turtle" in the distance near Howe's flag-ship. The sentinels on the "Eagle" saw it and popped away at "Long Bijé", but he ducked under the water as quickly as he came up. On board the "Eagle" confusion reigned. The sailors were filled with fear. Just then a big explosion took place, and great volumes of water were hurled into the air. The machine had been set to run an hour and the time was up, but the "Eagle" was unharmed. The whole fleet was so alarmed, however, that it was not long in getting up its anchors and sailing down the bay. Boats set out for poor Bijé, who was taken off at Governor's Island, exclaiming: "It is just as I said, gentlemen, it all failed for the cud of tobacco. I am always narvous without it. I got under the Eagle, but somehow the screw wouldn't hold on anyhow I fixed it. Just then I let go the rudder to feel for a cud to steady me, and the tide just swept me along so I couldn't manage to get back, and I pulled the lock and let the thunder box slide. All comes of being short of supplies of tobacco. So do give me a cud neow."

Those who have gone of summers to the White Mountains and looked upon Chocorua, that stark peak that guards the south-east approach to the range, may not know that a curse hovers about that mountain and that for many years the white settlers of Albany around the base of Chocorua attributed the strange diseases that fell upon their cattle to the effects of a malediction uttered by a dying Indian.



Chocorua was one of the last survivors of a large tribe of Indians to remain in his beloved White Mountains fishing and trapping long after his people had sought other hunting grounds. He had a young son as his companion, and once, chancing to go upon a journey, the chief confided the boy to the care of a white settler named Campbell. Now Campbell had a poison in the house that he used on wolves that frequented the neighborhood, and this the young Indian drank one day while the settler was away. He died soon after taking the poison. Chocorua returned, found the boy dead and swore vengeance on the house of Campbell. A few days later, Campbell's wife and children were murdered in their beds. The settler and a party of friends traced Chocorua to the summit of the mountain that bears his name, and brought him to bay at the side of a deep abyss. The white men commanded him to jump. The Indian saw no way of escape but before complying with their command he turned and cursed the pale faces.

"A curse upon ye white men! May the Great Spirit curse ye when he speaks in the clouds and his words are fire. Chocorua had a son and ye killed him when the sky was bright. Lightning blast your crops. Winds and fire destroy your dwellings. The evil spirit breathe death upon your cattle. Your graves lie in the war-path of the Indian. Panthers howl and wolves fatten in the fat of your bones. Chocorua goes to the Great Spirit—his curse stays with the white man." All of which is quite inclusive to say the least and ought to have made Campbell feel real miserable.

Before we close, let us go back for a moment to the "good old Colony days when we were under the king". One legend of Roxbury and Dorchester in Massachusetts, is that the rocks everywhere seen on the roadside are known as pudding-stones. Oliver Wendell Holmes tells us the following:

"There was a giant in the time of old  
A mighty one was he,  
He had a wife and she was a scold  
So he kept her shut in his mammoth fold;



And he had children three  
Then the Giant took his children three,  
And fastened them in the pen,  
And Dorchester Heights and Milton Hill  
Rolled back the sound again.  
Then he bought them a pudding, stuffed  
With plums, as big as the State House dome.  
Quoth he, "There's something for you to eat,  
So stop your mouths with your puddings sweet,  
And wait till your Dad comes home."  
What are those loved ones doing now,  
The wife and children sad?  
Oh, they are in a terrible rout,  
Screaming and throwing their puddings about,  
Acting as they were mad.  
They fling it over to Roxbury hills,  
They fling it over the plain,  
And all over Milton and Dorchester, too,  
Great lumps of pudding the giants threw.  
They tumbled as thick as rain,  
And if some pleasant afternoon  
You'll ask me out to ride,  
The whole of the story I'll tell,  
And you may see where the puddings fell,  
And pay for the punch beside.

I have dealt with a few of the legends and manifestations which have come down to us from the days before the Revolution, when the country we, as members of the Order of Founders and Patriots, are so proud to live in was in the beginning of its civilization. They were strange dark days when the unseen world seemed near, and its inhabitants very real, and "battle, murder and sudden death" were a part of the day's work. We have passed far beyond them in many ways, but the pendulum may have swung as far in the other direction. They were days when strong men and brave





women worked together in the foundation building of the great fair house we are now inhabiting. We owe much to them and we here pay grateful tribute to their self-sacrificing characters and dauntless courage. Their faults were largely the fruit of the times in which they lived, and their living was strong and brave and true. They suffered much and we are living in comparative ease to-day because they did much.

January 21, 1910.

John C. Coleman  
100 Broadway.

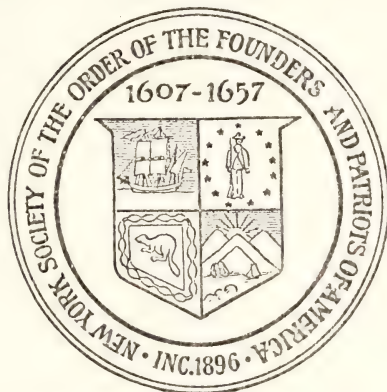


## Publications of the New York Society

1. "THE SETTLEMENT OF NEW YORK," by George Rogers Howell, March 18, 1897.
2. "THE BATTLE OF LEXINGTON," by Hon. John Winslow, May 13, 1897.
3. "GEORGE CLINTON," by Col. R. E. Prime, December 15, 1902.
4. "WASHINGTON, LINCOLN AND GRANT," by Gen. James Grant Wilson, April 6, 1903.
5. "EARLY NEW YORK," by Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt, January 15, 1904.
6. "THOMAS HOOKER, THE FIRST AMERICAN DEMOCRAT," by Walter Seth Logan, February 19, 1904.
7. "EARLY LONG ISLAND," by Hon. Wm. Winton Goodrich, March 16, 1904.
8. "BANQUET ADDRESSES," May 13, 1904.
9. "THE PHILIPPINES AND THE FILIPINOS," by Maj. Gen. Fred'k D. Grant, December 10, 1904.
10. "SOME SOCIAL THEORIES OF THE REVOLUTION," by Theodore Gilman, January 31, 1905.
11. "BANQUET ADDRESSES," May 13, 1905.
12. "THE STORY OF THE PEQUOT WAR," by Thos. Eggleston, LL. D., Ph. D., December 15, 1905.
13. "DISTINCTIVE TRAITS OF A DUTCHMAN," by Col. John W. Vrooman, February 23, 1906.
14. "AN INCIDENT OF THE ALABAMA CLAIMS ARBITRATION," by Col. Ralph E. Prime, March 23, 1906.
15. "BANQUET ADDRESSES AND MEMOIR OF HON. ROBERT B. ROOSEVELT," May 14, 1906.
16. "CONSTITUTION, BY-LAWS AND REGULATIONS OF THE ORDER, AND LIST OF MEMBERS OF THE GENERAL COURT, WITH BY-LAWS AND LIST OF MEMBERS OF THE NEW YORK SOCIETY," November 1, 1906.
17. "SOME MUNICIPAL PROBLEMS THAT VEXED THE FOUNDERS," by Rev. Wm. Reed Eastman, December 14, 1906.
18. "A VANISHED RACE OF ABORIGINAL FOUNDERS," by Brig. Gen'l Henry Stuart Turrill, U. S. A., February 14, 1907.
19. "LIST OF OFFICERS AND MEMBERS OF THE NEW YORK SOCIETY," November 15, 1907.
20. "THE HUDSON VALLEY IN THE REVOLUTION," by Francis Whiting Halsey, December 13, 1907.
21. "AMERICAN TERRITORY IN TURKEY; OR, ADMIRAL FARRAGUT'S VISIT TO CONSTANTINOPLE AND THE EXTRA-TERRITORIALITY OF ROBERT COLLEGE," by Ralph E. Prime, LL. D., D. C. L., February 14, 1908.
22. "PROCEEDINGS OF THE TWELFTH ANNUAL BANQUET OF THE NEW YORK SOCIETY OF THE ORDER OF THE FOUNDERS AND PATRIOTS OF AMERICA," May 13, 1908.
23. "SOME THINGS THE COLONY OF NORTH CAROLINA DID AND DID FIRST IN THE FOUNDING OF ENGLISH-SPEAKING AMERICA," by Dr. William Edward Fitch, December 11, 1908.



# The Origin, Rise and Down- fall of the State of Franklin, Under Her First and Only Governor, - John Sevier



"STEADFAST FOR GOD AND COUNTRY"

AN ADDRESS BY

WILLIAM EDWARD FITCH, M. D.

Historian and Registrar-General

DELIVERED BEFORE

THE NEW YORK SOCIETY

OF THE

ORDER OF THE FOUNDERS AND PATRIOTS  
OF AMERICA

AT THE HOTEL MANHATTAN, NEW YORK

March 11, 1910



# The New York Society

## OF THE

### ORDER OF THE FOUNDERS AND PATRIOTS OF AMERICA

---

#### OFFICERS

For The Year Ending April 19, 1911

*Governor*

GEORGE CLINTON BATCHELLER, LL.D.

*Deputy Governor*

THEODORE GILMAN

*Chaplain*

Rev. EDWARD PAYSON JOHNSON, D. D.

*Secretary*

WILLIAM EDWARD FITCH, LL.D.

*Treasurer*

MATHEW HINMAN

*State Attorney*

GOODWIN BROWN

*Registrar*

JOHN C. COLEMAN

*Genealogist*

LOUIS ANNIN AMES

*Historian*

THOMAS REDFIELD PROCTOR

#### COUNCILLORS

**1908-11**

Col. RALPH EARL PRIME,

EDGAR ABEL TURRELL

CHARLES W. B. WILKINSON

**1909-12**

Maj. General FREDERICK D. GRANT, U. S. A.

HOWARD KING COOLIDGE,

RICHARD HUBBARD ROBERTS

**1910-13**

Gen. STEWART LYNDON WOODFORD

THEODORE FITCH,

Col. GEORGE E. DEWEY





# The Origin, Rise and Down- fall of the State of Franklin, Under Her First and Only Governor, - John Sevier



"STEADFAST FOR GOD AND COUNTRY"

AN ADDRESS BY

WILLIAM EDWARD FITCH, M. D.

Historian and Registrar-General

DELIVERED BEFORE

THE NEW YORK SOCIETY

OF THE

ORDER OF THE FOUNDERS AND PATRIOTS  
OF AMERICA

AT THE HOTEL MANHATTAN, NEW YORK

---

March 11, 1910



# The Origin, Rise and Downfall of the State of Franklin, Under Her First and Only Governor— John Sevier

---

Mr. Governor, Ladies, Invited Guests and Associates of  
the New York Society of the Founders and Patriots  
of America:



WHEN our distinguished Governor called me on the 'phone two days before our December (1909) meeting and asked me if I could prepare an address for that meeting, I begged off, pleading, that my professional duties were such that it would be utterly impossible to prepare anything of interest or value on such short notice. He very generously allowed me to have my way, but exacted a promise that I would, at this meeting, take up the subject of the "State of Franklin," which I cursorily alluded to in closing my address, "Some things the Colony of North Carolina did, and did first, in the founding of English speaking America," delivered before this Society, in this hall, on December 11, 1908.

My fellow associates, I really wanted to speak upon another subject, but I have great respect for our Governor's prerogative, and so, in desperation, I promised him I would speak this evening upon the subject of "The Origin and Downfall of the State of Franklin." After committing myself to this subject, I endeavored in the intervals of a somewhat busy professional life to sit down in the quietude of my library and think thoughts as well as to study the thoughts of historians recorded more than one hundred years ago, and I shall now endeavor to give you, in the brief remarks I shall make, some few facts concerning the history of the mountain principality the State of Franklin. Of its history much is recorded but very little known at the present day. It may be curious then, as well as instructive, to trace the origin, rise, and downfall of this sovereignty.



Whenever it is my honor and pleasure to be in the company of this or any other similar representative patriotic society, I am always impressed by their varied individuality, and the distinctiveness of personality, which they enforce. This characteristic individuality and pleasing personality is always enhanced by the presence, beauty and grace of charming women. I am now reminded of what our distinguished fellow citizen, Mr. Choate, is reported to have said on an occasion somewhat similar in London, after looking over his audience and observing the brilliant gathering of handsome women intermingled with the gentlemen, said: "I am, by this scene, quickened into a livelier consciousness of what was meant by the biblical declaration that 'Man was created a little lower than the Angels.'" (Laughter)

Now dear ladies you are infinitely more than angels to me, but I rejoice that you are without wings lest you fly away, when I begin to recount to you a few forgotten historic facts, which are not as interesting to you ladies, as advanced facts concerning the latest Paris fashions; however, if you become the least bit uncomfortable where you are, I assure you that I will try to repay you for your attention before I am through, and in saying this, I don't wish to drift into the blandishment of the darky girl of the story, which I heard quoted in Hartford last spring to characterize the Connecticut Society's welcome to the General Court. According to the story, the Sixth Avenue darky girl, who, on her wedding trip to Rye Beach, in a New Haven accommodation, laid her head back on the shoulder of her smiling bridegroom, and whispered, "Honey, hain't yer 'shamed ter be so hansum?" (Laughter) But, whether the quality the darky girl noted in the groom was a thing of beauty or not makes no difference, it certainly stood for distinction.

To my mind that distinction stands for an idea. I like ideas, when I get them. Back of every deed, behind every great movement, anterior to every reformation or revolution, at the cradle of every race, there is an idea. This building in which we are, this association that we form, this occasion that calls us together, each is but the physical and outward expression of an idea. And when, for its expression, an idea takes not a building, nor a company, nor an occasion as the medium, but puts forth a radical characteristic as its symbol, it has required time for that utterance.

Nature moves with deliberation. She answers but slowly





to suggestion. To take a homely illustration—for a thousand years, at least according to the prints, the sporting world has bitten off the fox terrier's tail; yet, notwithstanding the almost rebuking quality of that insinuating criticism of her work, Nature still issues fox terrier puppies with their complement of caudal adornment. (Laughter.)

So, therefore, I submit that the cause for every reformation, the idea that they manifestly embody, must be looked for earlier than 1860; more remotely than 1776; further even than landing of the Pilgrim fathers in 1620; back and beyond Jamestown and 1607. Yes, back to the drafting and signing of the Magna Charta by the discontented Barons in 1215, when the people made a strenuous fight for freedom and liberty, securing the protection of life, liberty, and property from arbitrary spoliation. This spirit of independence was brought over to this country when the first *founders* landed at Roanoke Island, Jamestown, Plymouth Rock, Amsterdam and Boston. It has surged ever since in the life blood of every *founder's* son and daughter, and from 1771 to 1776 it was smouldering and at last burst forth, giving this country a pure democracy of freedom and individual liberty.

In my former address I gave you a succinct account of the early settlement of the Colony of North Carolina, reciting the hardships, persecutions, oppressions, extortions and tyranny suffered by the Colonists at the hands of all officers of the Crown; which led to the organization of the people, under the name of "Regulators," to concertedly oppose British tyranny, which eventually led to the "Revolution of the Regulators when they met and were the first to defy British arms, on May 16, 1771, at the battle of Alamance—'Here on the Banks of the great Alamance,' says Bancroft, the historian, 'was shed the first blood for American liberty and Independence.' "

The British flag was victorious but the defeat of the Regulators at the "Battle of Alamance" did not quench their desire for liberty, nor their determination to be free and independent; on the other hand, it produced still greater dissatisfaction with the existing regime of extortionate persecution and illegal fees demanded by Crown officers and their deputies. More than eight thousand of them shook off the "Yoke of British Oppression," sold their lands, gathered together their families and household goods into wagons and crossed over the mountains into



the Cherokee Country (Some Neglected History of North Carolina). There they traded with and bought from the Cherokee chiefs, all of the eastern half of their country bordering on the western boundary of the Province of the Colony of North Carolina, which now comprises the eastern portion of the present state of Tennessee, where they set to work to erect for themselves homes under a free government.

The Cherokees were the mountaineers of aboriginal America and like all other "sons of the forest," adored their country, which they deified and defended with a heroic devotion, patriotic constancy and an unyielding tenacity, which cannot be too much admired. The land of the Cherokee, in later years called the "Land of the Sky," was the most beautiful section of the new world. (Ramsey's History of Tennessee.) It comprised a great plateau lying along the sources of the Yadkin and Catawba and the Keowee, Tugaloo, Etowah and Coosa on the East and South, along the Holston, Clinch and Hiawassee on the West and North. This tribe of Indians lived in rude huts, and were agriculturally inclined, planting crops of corn, beans and pumpkins and cultivating orchards of apples, peaches and plums. According to Adair, the historian, writing in 1775, they were not rovers, but occupied 64 populous towns and numbered about 6000 warriors.

After establishing the Cherokee boundary line, (North Carolina Revolutionary and State Records), between the Colony of North Carolina and the Cherokee Nation, peace reigned between the Whites, Indians, and hunters. Pioneers from the east began to cross over the mountains into the Cherokee Country. The greatest tide of emigration from the Colony of North Carolina was from the source of the Yadkin and Catawba rivers. Early in 1770, Daniel Boone, who had previously crossed the mountain, left the vicinity of the "Little Yadkin" River in the Colony of North Carolina, acting as pilot for a new settlement in the mountains. A little later, Boone was joined by James Robertson, of Wake Co., in the Colony of North Carolina, who piloted a band of settlers to the Cherokee Country. They were soon followed by Jacob Brown, who, hearing of the settlements led by Boone and Robertson, piloted a party of several families to the Nolachucky.

The settlers led to the Cherokee Country by Boone, Robertson and Brown were heartily welcomed by a small Colony, who



had already settled in the almost impenetrable mountains under the leadership of Capt. John Sevier, of Virginia. He directed and aided in the construction of "Fort Watanga" on the Watanga River, where his father, his brother Valentine and himself settled in 1769, believing they were within the confines of the borders of the colony Virginia.

Remote from the seat of power and free from regal oppression, these honest-hearted, virtuous patriots found a welcome in the land of the Red Man. Thus the misgoverned Province of North Carolina sent forth eight thousand emigrants to the Cherokee Country; the poor in search of independence; others to regain broken fortunes, and aspiring to attain responsibility unattainable in the land of their nativity. The land beyond the mountains offered them at least, exemption from the supercilious annoyances of haughty crown officers, who claimed pre-eminence over them. Others came for a broader purpose of laying a deep foundation for a free Government of and by the people, and of acquiring under it distinction for themselves and posterity, escaping for all time further persecution at the hands of the English tyrants. Here they set to work to erect for themselves homes under a free government. The defeated Regulators settled on the Holston, Watauga and Nolachucky far beyond the influence and power of the state laws and executive officers of the Province of North Carolina.

The people dwelt mostly in isolated farm houses; in the midst of wild forests or in close vicinity to log "Stations," block houses, encompassed by palisades, in which were a few cabins to house the women and children in case of hostile invasion by the Indians. Scattered as they were, it is wonderful with what speed men came together, on occasions of sudden danger either to Jonesboro or to the home of Sevier on the Nolachucky, the usual places of rendezvous. As many as two thousand are known to have assembled within twenty-four hours after Sevier's couriers had sounded the alarm throughout the territory—so perfect was his system for conveying intelligence, and so fleet were the animals bestrode by those tireless riders.

The settlers, for the first few months were without laws or protection, save simple regulations of their own adoption, but in 1772, under the wise councils of Captain John Sevier, James Robertson and other leading spirits they drew up regulations for their guidance (The Watauga Government), which was paternal





and patriarchal, simple and moderate, but summary and firm, which sufficed for the first few years. The people enjoyed the advantages of their inchoate and infant government and under it accomplished many things, worthy of note. They opened paths across the mountains, felled the forests, opened fields, built forts and homes, "subdued the earth" and began rapidly to "replenish it" for "they married and were given in marriage," and the State of North Carolina, some years afterwards, deemed it a good opportunity for her to gain the credit of an act of supererogation, by passing a law confirming marriages and other deeds and doings of her wayward "children of the wood." (Colonial Revolutionary and State Records of North Carolina).

In June 1776 "Old Abraham" led a treacherous band of Cherokees from the Chilhowee Mountains against "Fort Watauga" commanded by Captain John Sevier and James Robertson. During the siege Captain Sevier discovered a young lady of tall and erect stature coming with the fleetness of a roe towards the fort, closely pursued by Indians, and her approach to the gate being cut off by the enemy, who, doubtless were confident of a captive for their scalping knives or of a victim to their guns and arrows; but turning suddenly, she eluded her pursuers, leaped the Palisades at another point, and fell into the arms of Captain John Sevier. This remarkably active and resolute woman was Miss Catherine Sherrill, who, a few years after this sudden leap into the arms of the Captain, became the devoted wife of the Colonel, and the bosom companion of the General, the people's man and the patriot, JOHN SEVIER. It is reported she used to say that, "this attack led by Old Abraham was the best thing he ever did, and that she was ready at any time to have another such race and even leap the Palisades in order to enjoy another such introduction."

In 1778 Captain Sevier's first wife, a Miss Hawkins of Virginia, died, leaving six children, and in 1779 he was married to the beautiful Catharine Sherrill, who bore him ten children. It is truly said, "She could outrun, outjump, walk more erect and ride more gracefully and skillfully than any other lady in all the mountains round about."

Isaac Shelly, a native of Maryland, born 1730, fought under General Forbs in 1758 when he led the advance, and took from the French, "Fort DuQuesne." He settled as he thought within the confines of Virginia in 1774, but when the boundary line





between Virginia and North Carolina was run in 1778 he found his home was within the Province of North Carolina. In 1779 he led a strong force against the Chicamauga Indians on the Tennessee River for which the Colony of Virginia appointed him a brigadier general.

From the time James Robertson, John Sevier and Isaac Shelly made the first settlements in the Cherokee country, until the end of the Revolutionary War and afterward, a constant Indian war was waged. (For letter to Governor Sevier from James Robertson, see appendix A.) For several years before the Revolution, the British had been furnishing the Indians,—Cherokees, Choctows, and Chickasaws with arms and ammunition and in every way encouraged them in making war upon the Franklinites. During the Revolution the Indians were allies of the British and kept up a constant running warfare, using rifle, tomahawk and scalping knife. In 1779, Captain Sevier raised troops, invaded the Indian territory, successfully fought the battle of "Boyd's Creek," took the Indians prisoners and burned their towns. A few days after this battle Colonel Sevier's forces were joined by Col. Arthur Campbell with a Virginia Regiment and by Col. Isaac Shelly in command of a regiment of mountain troops and these three Colonels in harmony scoured the Cherokee Country, scattered hostile bands, captured and destroyed their towns, and returned to their homes in better security and with every confidence of peace. Captain John Sevier was actively engaged with Col. Christian of Virginia in an expedition against the Indians at "Double Springs," and he neglected no opportunity to pursue them or chastise them for their insults and outrages. He promptly united with others, without envy, jealousy, or reservation, and he as readily fitted out expeditions from his immediate neighborhood, from his own purse, paying for equipment and arms when needed without boasting and without fear, and with never a failure. In 1777 he was commissioned Lieut. Colonel by the General Assembly of North Carolina.

1780 was the critical year of the American Revolution, certainly so far as the Southern States were concerned; Charleston and Savannah had fallen; General Gates had suffered defeat at Camden by Cornwallis; the American Army had suffered reverses here and there; money exhausted, provisions and ammunition scarce—many hearts fainting, fearful and desponding; Tories multiplying, savage and daring—the British troops over-



running South Carolina and Georgia, part of Virginia, and advancing to the Mountains of North Carolina. The Indians armed, bribed and instigated by the British were on a constant warfare, thus the sun of American Independence was obscured—hidden behind accumulating clouds, which were soon to be rent asunder, and suddenly it beamed forth and sent its cheering rays through all the land, as it rose over the summit of King's Mountain. Ferguson was marching towards the mountains with a force of 2000 British with all the pomp and eclat following Gen. Gate's defeat and Sumpter's disaster. The brave were despairing, the timid taking protection with the British and the Tories jubilant. With the Country in this condition of affairs Ferguson was ravaging the whole West, subduing all opponents of English power, and encouraging, by bribes and artifice, others to join him.

When Colonels Sevier, Shelly and Campbell learned of Ferguson's depredations they resolved to attack him. These fearless men assembled at Fort Watauga, with their followers, about 1400 strong on September 25, 1780. It was decided to march on the enemy, and they were soon joined by Col. Cleavland with a force of nearly 300 men. On the night of October 20th the officers again met in council. Never before were purer minds deliberating, never firmer hearts assembled. They felt deeply the dangers and difficulties before them. The liberty of their country, the lives of themselves and faithful followers, the safety of their wives and children were the objects of their deliberations. At a council of war the next day, Col. Campbell was urged to take command, and immediately attack Ferguson at Gilbert Town. The next day they were joined at Cowpens by Col. Williams of South Carolina with a force of 300 men. The Americans now numbered about 2000 men. When they reached Gilbert Town they learned that Ferguson had left and taken a strong position on the top of King's Mountain, which he impiously asserted that "God Almighty could not drive him from King's Mountain," and that he was "King of King's Mountain."

At three o'clock on the afternoon of October 7, 1780, after being in the saddle for nearly thirty hours, without rest, drenched by a cold, heavy rain, these fearless men approached King's Mountain. Its plateau from east to west is about 500 yards and from north to south about 65 yards, and the summit about



100 feet above surrounding country. On this summit, the wary little Scotch fighting Ferguson and his army were posted.

By consent, Campbell was appointed commander in chief, The forces under Sevier and MacDowell formed the right wing. Campbell and Shelly the centre, and the left wing by Cleavland and Williams. The plan of battle being to surround the mountain and attack all sides simultaneously. In this order, they were within one-half mile of the mountain before they were discovered by the enemy. The centre wing commenced the attack and marched boldly up the mountain. The battle here was fierce and furious. The centre gave way, but was reinforced and returned the charges. The enemy then made a furious onset before the eastern summit and drove the Americans away. They soon rallied, under reinforcements from Col. Sevier's command and in turn, drove the enemy before their rain of bullets to the Western end, where Cleavland and Williams were engaged with another division of Ferguson's command. Campbell's men reached the summit and poured a deadly volley of lead into the enemy—the whole mountain was covered with smoke and belched forth thunders of war, whose reverberations shook "King's Mountain" from base to summit.

Ferguson being surrounded and attacked on all sides made a desperate attempt to break through the American lines, but was killed in the attempt more than seven bullets having passed through his body. This ended the battle. The British colors were lowered and a white flag raised for quarters. The engagement lasted an hour and a half. The British loss, killed and wounded, 1,105 men; prisoners of war 800 men, and 1500 stands of arms. American loss, killed 28 men and wounded 60 men.

Col. John Sevier is entitled to the hero's share of all the credit and all the glory won on the seventh day of October, 1780. The sword and note of thanks from the Legislature of North Carolina bespeak his appreciation, they were earned, well earned and were creditable to the state.

"Forth from its scabbard, pure and bright,  
Flashed the sword of John Sevier  
Far in the front of the deadly fight  
High o'er the brave in the cause of Right,  
Its stainless sheen, like a beacon light,  
Led on to victory.





"Out of its scabbard never hand  
Waved sword from stain as free,  
Nor purer sword led braver band,  
Nor braver bled for a brighter land,  
Nor brighter land had a cause so grand,  
Nor cause a chief like John Sevier."

He was tendered a commission as brigadier general by vote of the General Assembly of North Carolina, and, as some suspected with a view of playing to his ambition and withdrawing him from any further participation in the erection of a new state, but, as has been said, "He, like Moses of old, chose rather to suffer affliction with his people, than be flattered with the writing on sheepskins," and he did suffer. But out of it all the Lord delivered him, and the people finally shouted his praise in paeons and amen. To him the "Coon-Skin Money" of the State of Franklin was of more esteem than the parchment roll with the Great Seal of North Carolina attached.

This success of Sevier, Shelly and Campbell over Ferguson at King's Mountain is the most astounding and signal victory recorded on the pages of history. The soldiers with whom Sevier and Shelly defeated Ferguson were the brave and true men of the Mountain principality, who had stood between the women and children and the Indian's tomahawk for more than ten years. This victory was the turning point in the fortunes of America. This decisive blow prostrated the British for the time, vanquished Tory influence, and encouraged the hopes of the patriots. Lord Cornwallis, who was about to invade North Carolina hurriedly left Charlotte and dropped back to Winsboro, S. C., to await reinforcements.

In 1787 General Nathaniel Greene, having learned of Col. Sevier's prowess as an Indian fighter, appointed him a commissioner to make treaties with the Chiefs of the Cherokees, Chickasaws and other tribes. During this year Colonel Sevier conducted several successful and important enterprises against the Indians for which the Legislature of the Colony of North Carolina passed solemn resolutions, complimenting him for volunteer services and noble deeds and then urged him "to fight away on his own hook" defending the frontiers. In September, 1787, Gen. Greene urged Col. Sevier to advance to his aid, which he promptly did, commanding several hundred men to "rouse the Whigs and whip the Tories." Cornwallis surrendered at Yorktown, in October of this year, ending the war.



The close of the Revolutionary war found the United States involved in heavy responsibilities—Congress devised many plans of relief; one was to solicit the states, owning vacant lands, to throw them into common stock to liquidate the debt of justice, honor and gratitude. This appeal did not fall idly on the state of North Carolina and in 1784 the General Assembly ceded to the General Government all that territory west of the Appalachian Mountains and authorized her representatives in Congress to execute a deed, provided Congress would accept the offer within two years. This act, patriotic and self sacrificing, was worthy of the state of North Carolina, and although not accepted by Congress was the source of great dissatisfaction and civil commotion among the Western settlements. The fearless pioneers of the west, who had gone into the wilderness, had suffered incredible hardships, many of whom had been murdered by the savages, some had their wives and children massacred, and all had suffered in privation and property. Naturally the mountaineers viewed with suspicion this act of the Legislature of North Carolina, (1784) and on the 23d of August following called a committee in Jonesboro of which Col. John Sevier was chosen president. They resolved that an express be dispatched to Congress to press the acceptance of North Carolina ceding her western lands, and adjourned to meet again on the 16th of September, proximo.

The people again were assembled, according to the call of Sevier at Jonesboro on December 14th, when Col. John Sevier mounted the Court House steps and read a letter from the General Assembly of North Carolina, containing the information that the Legislature had repealed the act ceding the western lands to Congress. "Revolutions take no steps backward." The Spirit of the people was aroused, and a convention of five delegates for each militia district immediately went into session at Jonesboro, with Col. John Sevier presiding. They prepared a constitution, which was submitted to the people and adopted. The new government went immediately into effect. It provided for a house of Representatives and General Assembly. The General Assembly convened and enacted, that this commonwealth be known as "The State of Franklin," with *Legislative*, *Judicial* and *Executive* Departments. The Constitution was ratified, Col. John Sevier was chosen Governor, Langdon Carter was speaker of the Senate, William Gage speaker of the



House of Commons, David Campbell, Joshua Gist and John Henderson Judges of the Supreme Court. The General Assembly of the State of Franklin, by a communication signed by both speakers informed the Governor of North Carolina that the people west of the Cherokee boundary line, now the State of Franklin had declared themselves sovereign and independent of the State of North Carolina. (N. C. Rev. and State Records).

The total population of the district (exclusive of the Cumberland settlement) at this time cannot be agreed to with decided accuracy, but estimating it with the force with which Sevier soon afterwards offered to march to the aid of Georgia, it could not have been more than 25,000. A handful, truly, to set up independent government, when surrounded by hostile savages, opposed by the great state of North Carolina which then ranked as third in the union. It was no easy task that Sevier assumed, when he took the oath to well and truly administer for three years the office of Governor of the New "State of Franklin." He had to evolve order from rank disorder, to erect a stable government from the most unstable materials. He had to create a currency when even the wealthy had not enough money to pay their taxes, and the North Carolina "promise to pay" were not worth one cent on a dollar. He had to provide facilities for education, when nothing above a cross road school-house existed in the country. He had to establish courts and enforce law when a lawless element pouring in on the heels of the Revolution had flooded their settlements, or stalking unchecked upon their high-way. And he had to organize and discipline a militia with which to meet the 10,000 Creeks and Cherokees, who, armed and backed by Spain maintained a threatening warfare towards the inhabitants of the "State of Franklin." During all this time John Sevier stood guard over and protected the women and children of the "State of Franklin." In short, he had to enforce law, establish good order, and foil the murderous designs of a great European power, when he was himself acting contrary to the law, and in defiance of the constituted authorities of the country. It was a Herculean task, but in an incredible short period and without the loss of a single life, Sevier accomplished it, and in so doing he displayed a fertility of resources, a wise statesmanship that entitled him to rank very high as an administrator; and we are forced to conclude that if his course had been obstructed by none but out-





side foes, he would have long before established a stable government. Within sixty days from the coming together of the legislature of the "State of Franklin" internal affairs were reduced to a satisfactory order. The Supreme Court had been established with David Campbell as Chief Justice—the same who had been named for that office by North Carolina, and the Governor organized the militia, now over 4000 strong,—placing over it William Cocke and Daniel Kennedy as brigadier-general—he himself being commander-in-chief. Having thus provided for the enforcement of law and the defense of his country, Sevier directed the attention of his legislature to subjects of less importance. At his suggestion it incorporated an institution for higher education to be presided over by Parson Doak, a pioneer preacher. It was named Martin Academy in compliment to Gov. Martin of North Carolina, but its title was subsequently changed to Washington College. It was the first institution for classical learning west of the Alleghanies. The Legislature passed an act levying a tax for the support of the Government "to determine the value of such gold and silver coin" as was in circulation, and to "ascertain salaries," to be allowed the Governor and other state officials. They were fixed at the following magnificent sums: for the Governor, 200 pounds; Judge of Supreme Court, 150 pounds; Secretary of State, 25 pounds, and the fees of his office. Members of the Legislature were to receive four shillings per diem. The appointment of all minor officials were left in the hands of the Governor, and he continued, in office all those who held commissions under North Carolina. Thus the passage from the old to the new States did violence to no one and produced no convulsion.

But no civilized government has existed within historic times without a circulating medium, and some standard of value by which to regulate exchanges. Among civilized nations the standard of exchange is gold and silver, but the North American Indian regarded wampum as money, and Pontiac showing less of credit upon birch-bark, which were redeemed by the French in hard currency, but gold and silver were sometimes scarce commodities even in civilized communities; and at all times, while they had remained the measure of value, other articles of necessity had been resorted to as a circulating medium. In 1631 it was enacted in Massachusetts that corn at current prices should be received in payment of debts and in 1656 musket-balls, "full bore" were





made a legal tender at a farthing a piece. As late as 1680 the town of Hingham, Massachusetts, paid its taxes in milk-pails. In South Carolina as late as 1738, it was hides, tallow and furs; while in Maryland and Virginia for more than a century the standard of value, as well as a circulating medium was tobacco. In the latter state it was enacted that the Marshall should be paid for "laying by heels" five pounds of tobacco; "for duckings" 10 pounds; "for pillory" 10 pounds; and during a long period the market value of a wife—good or bad—was 150 pounds of tobacco. At the time of the Revolution the currency of nearly all the Colonies was poorly lithographed "promises to pay" printed on dingy paper by which the Government Treasurer did not so much as agree to pay the sum that was called for by "the shin plaster." In the Colony of North Carolina, it simply read, "North Carolina Currency, Half a Dollar, By authority of Congress at Halifax, April, 1776" and in one corner were the figures of a man and a dog and the man discharging a leveled musket, with the motto of 'Hit or Miss.' The thing certainly "hit" somebody or it would not now be in existence, but it has certainly made a "miss" if ever attempted to draw its face value from the Treasury of North Carolina.

It may be questioned if Sevier or any of his legislators ever so much as heard of the musket-ball and milk-pail currency of Massachusetts, or of the Virginia mothers, who were perhaps dear bargains at 150 pounds of tobacco. These men had probably none of these precedents before them, but there being next to no gold or silver in Franklin, they felt the need of some other circulating medium, which had intrinsic value, in as much, as it could be either worn or eaten, and was moreover, within the reach of everyone who had a strong arm, a true aim and a good rifle. In the law levying a tax for the support of the government, they inserted this clause:

"Be it enacted that it shall and may be lawful for the aforesaid land-tax, and all polls to be paid in the following manner: flax linen, 1000 fine, at three shillings and six pence per yard; 900 fine, three shillings; 800 fine, two shillings and nine pence; 700 fine, two shillings and six pence; 600 fine, two shillings; linen, one shilling nine pence; linsey, three shillings; wollen and cotton linsey, three shillings and six pence per yard; good clean beaver skins, six shillings; cased otter skins, six shillings; uncased otter skins, five shillings; raccoon and fox skins, one shil-



ling and three pence; woolen cloth, 10 shillings per yard; bacon well cured, six pence per pound; good clean tallow, six pence per pound; good clean beeswax, one shilling per pound; good distilled rye whisky, two shillings and six pence per gallon; good peach or apple brandy, three shillings per gallon; good neat, well managed tobacco, fit to be prized and pass inspection, 115 shillings per hundred weight, and less in proportion for the greater or less quality."

"And all the salaries and allowances hereby made shall be paid to any Treasurer, Sheriff or collector of public taxes, to any person entitled to the same, to be paid in specific articles as collected and at the rates allowed by the state for the same; or in current money of the State of Franklin."

It will be noticed that the closing paragraph provides that taxes might be paid in "current money of the State of Franklin which shows that this "coon-skin currency" as it was termed—was merely a temporary expedient, designed for the present relief of taxpayers; and that Sevier looked forward to the possession of a more civilized circulating medium. The "State of Franklin" soon had \$30,000 in silver issued from the mint (of Charles Robertson—some neglected history of North Carolina) but nevertheless the articles enumerated, for the time, passed as current money. It was at first confidently asserted that this currency could not be counterfeited, but in this its advocates were mistaken. It was most all of skins, which passed from hand to hand in bundles or bales, from the end of which the caudal appendages were allowed to protrude, to designate the species of the animal. Before long acute financiers affixed the tail of the otter to the skin of the fox and the raccoon, and thereby got the better of the receiver in about four shillings and nine pence upon each peltry.

The rapidity with which the above named acts were passed show not only great unanimity among the legislators, but the remarkable ascendancy which Sevier had over the frontier people. His word was literally their law, and their absolute devotion to him was what had enabled him to conquer his greatly superior savage enemies. Now with the strong militia organized and equipped, he had no fear of the Indians, but he preferred peace to war, and when internal affairs were once set in order, he lost no time in dispatching messengers to the Indian Capital, inviting the principal chieftians to conference to arrange terms on



which the two races might live together in "perpetual amity."

Sevier was engaged in almost every Indian treaty on negotiation with the Cherokees, Choctaws, Chickasaws and Chicamaugas and other Indian Tribes. He, at last, from his honorable tactics with the red men acquired the just distinction of 'The Treaty Maker.' His more familiar sobriquet "among the people" and with the Indians was "Nolachucky Jack." In the many treaties he negotiated with the Indians while Governor of the "State of Franklin" or at other times, prior and subsequent "the pipe" was always lighted with North Carolina notes, of which he had a trunk full in his home on the Nolachucky, aggregating more than \$200,000 dollars in North Carolina currency—the continental paper—which was not worth a continental—exclamation.

In 1785 the General Assembly of North Carolina, in session at Newborn passed an act to obliterate for all time the conduct of the people of the "State of Franklin," provided they at once returned their allegiance to the State of North Carolina, and appointed elections to be held in the different counties to elect members to the General Assembly of North Carolina.

It was a momentous crisis in Sevier's career, and that also of the nearly 30,000 people whose well being and safety depended upon his continuing to be their leader—only two courses were open to him—either submission or open rebellion, and that he, through it all, appreciated the gravity of his position, is shown by the fact that he took no less than thirty days to decide upon his action. He decided to stand by his people, and soon he had to contend with the Colony of North Carolina at arms length, with action and vigilance—political opponents hand-to-hand, with the Indians hip and thigh and from tree to tree, but he feared not, he faltered not, and he failed not.

As a necessary consequence, public opinion was divided between the adherents of the State of Franklin and the Mother State of North Carolina. The next year presented a strange state of affairs; two empires extended at the same time over the same territory, and over the same people. Courts were held by both governments, military officers appointed by both, to exercise the same powers. Governor Sevier and the State of Franklin were opposed by the adherents of the Mother State of North Carolina, led by Col. John Tipton.

In a luckless hour, during the fall of 1788, there arose certain





conservative and unimaginative characters in the Mountain principality of the State of Franklin, who for unknown reasons turned their allegiances to the state of their nativity, forsaking their grand and noble leader, Col. John Sevier, the puissant Governor of the State of Franklin, whose prowess was known and acknowledged from Murphey to the Chattanooga mountains and who, for years, had fought their battles, for the leadership of Col. John Tipton who was the controlling spirit of their loyalist forces. Armed partisans of both Sevier and Tipton were parading the country, each faction believing in the justification of their actions. The followers of Gov. Sevier continued loyal to the State of Franklin, maintaining its laws and upholding its courts; the opposition adhered to the laws and courts of the State of North Carolina. This latter court in session at Jonesboro in September, 1788, issued a bench warrant for Gov. Sevier for high treason against the State of North Carolina. Had the destroying angel passed through the land, and destroyed the first born in every section, the feelings of the hardy frontiersmen would not have been more highly incensed; had the chiefs and warriors of the whole Cherokee nation fallen upon and butchered the defenceless settlers, the feelings of retaliation and revenge would not have been more deeply awakened in their bosoms, They had suffered with him and fought under him, with him, they had endured the dangers and privations of a frontier life and a savage warfare; and they were not the spirits to remain inactive when their friend and leader was in danger.

The decree of the Court was soon conveyed to the Governor, who in company with a band of bold frontier boys were in attendance at this Court. As soon as Sevier and his friends learned of the Court's action, they mounted their fiery steeds and rode towards Sevier's home. Col. Tipton and Capt. Martin, his lieutenant, armed with the warrant, and supported by their followers, set out in pursuit of Gov. Sevier—a broad shouldered, handsome, gay courtier, in buckskin—small wonder that he was idolized by the people of the State of Franklin and elected to the highest office in the gift of the people. Governor Sevier spent the night with a Mrs. Brown, near Jonesborough. After bidding his hostess good-night, he was shown to his room, and nothing marred the stillness until early next morning, as the streaks of daylight revealed the milky mist through which the forest trees along the river's brink showed like phantoms, after



which came strains of royal purple on the milky haze, followed by those of scarlet, and yellow, like a mandarin's robe, peeps of deep blue fading into azure while the mist lifted heavenward; the fiery eye of the morning sun was cocked over the crest of the mountain, and beyond; as Mrs. Brown sat in the doorway of her humble home she observed a body of men riding hard in the valley, coming twoards her house. She awakened the Governor, and awaited the approach of the riders. At the head of the body, on a powerful horse, she saw a resolute man, the figure of turbulence itself; whom she took for Col. Tipton, once secessionist,—now champion of the "old North State"—arch enemy of Gov. John Sevier. The leader of his followers soon drew reign in front of Mrs. Brown's door. Tipton, who was heavily armed swore he would kill the Governor if he made any resistance. The Governor was arrested and carried to Jonesborough, and from there he was hurried to Morganton in North Carolina and lodged in jail to await trial.

The news of the Governor's arrest spread over the mountain principality with almost the quickness of thought. That night and all next day, from the east, west, north and south the hardy pioneers poured into the "Capital"—thousands of infuriated men, shouting threats and imprecations on Tipton and North Carolina. At last cool heads counselled and a bold stroke was decided upon. A band of less than a dozen men, including two of the Governor's sons, soon left in hot pursuit. They crossed the mountains, determined to rescue their beloved leader or leave their bones to bleach upon the hills of Western North Carolina, as a proud memento of the children of the mountain principality of the State of Franklin. It was learned that the trial was to take place at Morganton, in Western North Carolina and thither this daring band, with relays of fresh horses rapidly journeyed. Their plan was to obtain the Governor's release by strategy, if possible. If not successful in this, then they were determined to burn the town, and storm the jail while the confusion over the fire held the people's attention.

When the rescuing party reached Morganton, court was in session, with the prisoner before the bar of justice. The members of the rescuing party mixed with the crowd and easily passed off as strangers attracted by common curiosity. The eader entered the court room, and the instant his eye met the glaze of Sevier, the Governor knew that rescue was at hand, but



neither betrayed his thoughts. During a pause in the proceedings, the leader of the rescuing party stepped in front of the Judge and said, "Judge are you through with that man?" pointing to Sevier. In the meantime Sevier had caught a glimpse of his favorite saddle horse standing at the court house door with the bridle rein carelessly thrown across the pommel of his saddle. Taking advantage of the confusion caused by the stranger interrupting the court, Sevier sprang to the door, then into the saddle. With the rapidity of thought, his brave followers joined him and triumphantly carried him back to the "State of Franklin."

In 1778 the measures proposed and adopted to satisfy the inhabitants of the State of Franklin and the anxiety of North Carolina to yield up her western territory to the General Government of the United States, and be relieved of the many urgent demands upon her treasury for their western countries, induced Governor Sevier and the supporters of the State of Franklin to come into adjustment. The western territory of North Carolina was ceded to the United States by North Carolina, and immediately became the "Territory South of the Ohio." Early in February, 1790, the State of Franklin quietly died, the stage of territorial government was passed through; the state of Tennessee was born and admitted to the Union, and General Sevier was chosen her first Governor. In all the period from the beginning of the independent government in 1772, to the birth of the state of Tennessee, Gov. John Sevier was incessantly engaged in the defense of the settlements, and exposed to the depredations of the Indians. He was Governor of Tennessee for 12 years and later served two terms as a member of Congress from Tennessee.

General Sevier descended from an ancient family in France, whose name was Xavier; and his own uniform, bold and unique signature is something like that chirography. The chirography of Governor Sevier is a specimen, beautiful and curious. His father, Valentine Xavier, was born in London, and emigrated to America in the early part of the seventeenth century—settled on the Shenandoah in Virginia, where John Sevier was born in 1740.

History has been strangely neglectful of the memory of this, one of the most distinguished pioneers of the mountain principality, the State of Franklin and adjoining States, whose early annals are adorned by the records of his prowess in arms, and his wisdom as a civilian. His was a busy life.





He was one of the most remarkable men the State of Franklin or any other country ever produced—never at rest, never a retired man nor a private citizen. He died while on an Indian mission at an encampment on the Tallopoosa River near Decatur, Tenn. on September 24, 1815, and was buried nearby with military honors. A monument to his memory stands to the left of the new gate, just inside the north enclosure of Nashville Cemetery, a worthy tribute of individual munificence and patriotism to "merit unrequited."

The monument consists of a beautiful marble shaft, mounted upon a plynth; the shaft is illustrated with a very striking and appropriate design, neatly carved out of solid marble, representing two swords crossed, surmounted by a wreath, and beneath an Indian tomahawk and quiver of arrows, emblematic of the triumph of our arms under the heroic auspices of General Sevier, and the blessings of peace and the arts of civilization succeeding the bloody and protracted Indian wars illustrating the earthly history of the State of Franklin, in which he acted a most arduous, responsible and distinguished part.

But when we review the deeds of this man's life, and ask for evidences of due appreciation, we wonder, and are sad that a people so intelligent, so rich, so proud, so honorable—a people ever ready to make the welkin ring with the spirit of patriotism and independence, and to glorify the deeds of daring and to give hearty expressions of praise to a devoted public servant—should not have raised a proud cenotaph to teach their children and the world, to revere the name of John Sevier. He deserves this, and more. The State of Tennessee only honors his name in the "Country of Sevier."

Thus we see that the State of Franklin was the immediate offspring of the Revolution of the Regulators, culminating in the Battle of Alamance in 1771. Their independence was a reality before it was dreamed of elsewhere. In the little commonwealth of the "State of Franklin," the British flag was never unfurled, and no British officer ever trod the soil. They paid tribute to no government on earth except their own. Here an outraged people, outlawed and oppressed by British tyranny set to the people of the new world the dangerous example of erecting themselves into a state, separate and distinct from, and independent of, the authority of the English Crown, where they enjoyed Freedom, that twin sister of virtue, the brightest of





all the spirits that descended in the train of religion from the throne of God, leading man up higher to the early glories of His being,—the Angel, from whose presence happiness spreads like the sunrise over the darkness of the land, at the moving of whose scepter knowledge, peace, fortitude and wisdom descend, at the voice of whose trumpet more than British tyranny is broken and all men are free and equal.

---

## Appendix "A"

Nashville, 1st August, 1787.

Sir:

By accounts from the Chickasaws we are informed that at a Grand Council in the Creeks, it was determined by the Whole Nation to do their utmost this fall to cut off this Country, and we expect the Cherokees have joined them, (as they) as they Were to have Come in Some time ago to Make peace Which they have not done—every Circumstance seems to confirm this, on the 5th day of July a party of Creeks killed Captain Davinport agent for Georgia and three More in the Chickasaw Nation wounded three and took one prisoner, which the Chickasaws are not able to resent for Want of Amunition.

The Country are drawing together in large Stations And doing everything Necessary for their defense, but I fear Without some timely Assistance we shall feel a Sacrifice: amunition is Very Scarce, and a Chickasaw now here tells Us they imagine they will Reduce our Stations by killing all our Cattle & C. and Starving us out.

We expect from every Account they are now on Their Way to this Country to the Number of a thousand.

I beg of you to use your influence in that Country to relieve us which I think Might be done by fixing a Station Near the Mouth of Elk if possible, or otherwise by Marching A body of Men into the Cherokee country, or in Any Manner you May Judge beneficial. We hope our brethern in that Country will not Suffer us to be Massacred by the Savages without giving us any Assistance, And I candidly assure you that Never Was their a time in which I imagined ourselves in More danger. Kentucky being Nearest we have applied their for some present Assistance, but fear we shall find None in time.



Could You Now Give US Any. I am Convinced it would have the Greater tendency to Unite our Countries as the people will. Never forget who are their friends in a time of such imminent danger.

I have Wrote to General Shelby on this Subject and hope that no devision Will prevent you from endeavoring to give Us relief, which Will ever gratefully be remembered by the Inhabitans of Cumberland.

And your most Obediant Humbl Servt.

JAMES ROBERTSON.

To his Excellency John Sevier, Esq. Governor of the State of Franklin.

The above is a True Copy.\*

JOHN SEVIER.

(Endorsed)

7 August, 1787.

Jas. Robertson, Nashville, to Governor Sevier.

---

\*This letter of James Robertson to Governor Sevier is copied from the original, (verbatim et literatim) now in possession of Mr. Telomon Cuyler of New York City.



# Publications

## OF THE

# New York Society

---

1. **"The Settlement of New York,"** by George Rogers Howell, March 18, 1897.
2. **"The Battle of Lexington,"** by Hon. John Winslow, May 13, 1897.
3. **"George Clinton,"** by Col. R. E. Prime, December 15, 1902.
4. **"Washington, Lincoln and Grant,"** by Gen. James Grant Wilson, April 6, 1903.
5. **"Early New York,"** by Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt, January 15, 1904.
6. **"Thomas Hooker, The First American Democrat,"** by Walter Seth Logan, February 19, 1904.
7. **"Early Long Island,"** by Hon. Wm. Winton Goodrich, March 16, 1904.
8. **"Banquet Addresses,"** May 13, 1904.
9. **"The Philippines and The Filipinos,"** by Maj. Gen. Frederick D. Grant, December 10, 1904.
10. **"Some Social Theories of the Revolution,"** by Theodore Gilman, January 31, 1905.
11. **"Banquet Addresses,"** May 13, 1905.
12. **"The Story of the Pequot War,"** by Thos. Egleston, LL.D., Ph. D., December 15, 1905.
13. **"Distinctive Traits of a Dutchman,"** by Col. John W. Vrooman, February 23, 1906.
14. **"An Incident of the Alabama Claims Arbitration,"** by Col. Ralph E. Prime, March 23, 1906.
15. **"Banquet Addresses and Memoir of Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt,"** May 14, 1906.
16. **"Constitution, By-Laws and Regulations of the Order, and List of Members of the General Court, with By-Laws and List of Members of the New York Society,"** November 1, 1906.
17. **"Some Municipal Problems that Vexed the Founders,"** by Rev. Wm. Reed Eastman, December 14, 1906.
18. **"A Vanished Race of Aboriginal Founders,"** by Brig. Gen'l. Henry Stuart Turrill, U. S. A., February 14, 1907.
19. **"List of Officers and Members of the New York Society,"** November 15, 1907.
20. **"The Hudson Valley in the Revolution,"** by Francis Whiting Halsey, December 13, 1907.
21. **"American Territory in Turkey; or, Admiral Farragut's Visit to Constantinople and the Extra-territoriality of Robert College,"** by Ralph E. Prime, LL.D., D. C. L., February 14, 1908.
22. **"Proceedings of the Twelfth Annual Banquet of the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America,"** May 13, 1908.
23. **"Some Things the Colony of North Carolina Did and Did First in the Founding of English-Speaking America,"** by Dr. William Edward Fitch, M. D., December 11, 1908.
24. **"Colonial Legends and Folk Lore,"** by Hon. John C. Coleman, Jan. 20, 1910.





Proceedings on the Dedication  
of the Tablet erected by the  
New York Society of the Order  
of the Founders and Patriots of  
America, on the site of Fort  
Amsterdam, at the United  
States Custom House, New  
York City.

September 29th, 1909.

---



"Steadfast for God and Country"



# The New York Society

of the

## Order of the Founders and Patriots

of

## America



### Officers—1909-10

|   |   |
|---|---|
| GEO. CLINTON BATCHELLER, LL.D., <i>Governor</i>   | THEODORE GILMAN, <i>Treasurer</i>           |
| COL. HENRY W. SACKETT, <i>Deputy Governor</i>     | JOHN C. COLEMAN, <i>State Attorney</i>      |
| REV. EDWARD PAYSON JOHNSON, D.D., <i>Chaplain</i> | CLARENCE ETTIENNE LEONARD, <i>Registrar</i> |
| CHARLES EDEY FAY, <i>Secretary</i>                | LOUIS ANNIN AMES, <i>Genealogist</i>        |
| WILLIAM EDWARD FITCH, M.D., <i>Historian</i>      |   |

### Councillors—1907-10

|                              |                |
|------------------------------|----------------|
| GEN. STEWART LYNDON WOODFORD | THEODORE FITCH |
| COL. GEORGE E. DEWEY         |                |

1908-11

|                         |                    |
|-------------------------|--------------------|
| COL. RALPH EARL PRIME   | EDGAR ABEL TURRELL |
| CHARLES W. B. WILKINSON |                    |

1909-12

|  |                               |
|--|-------------------------------|
| MAJ.-GEN. FREDERICK D. GRANT, U. S. A. | EDWARD HAGAMAN HALL, L. H. D. |
| RICHARD HUBBARD ROBERTS                |                               |

### Committee on Tablet

|   |                               |
|---|-------------------------------|
| THEODORE FITCH, <i>Chairman</i>                     |                               |
| MAJ.-GEN. FREDERICK D. GRANT, U. S. A.              | COL. RALPH E. PRIME           |
| GEN. STEWART L. WOODFORD                            | EDWARD HAGAMAN HALL, L. H. D. |
| GEORGE CLINTON BATCHELLER, LL.D., <i>Ex-Officio</i> |                               |

### Sub-Committee on Dedication of Tablet

|   |                         |
|---|-------------------------|
| WILLIAM EDWARD FITCH, M.D., <i>Chairman</i> |                         |
| CLARENCE ETTIENNE LEONARD                   | CHARLES W. B. WILKINSON |



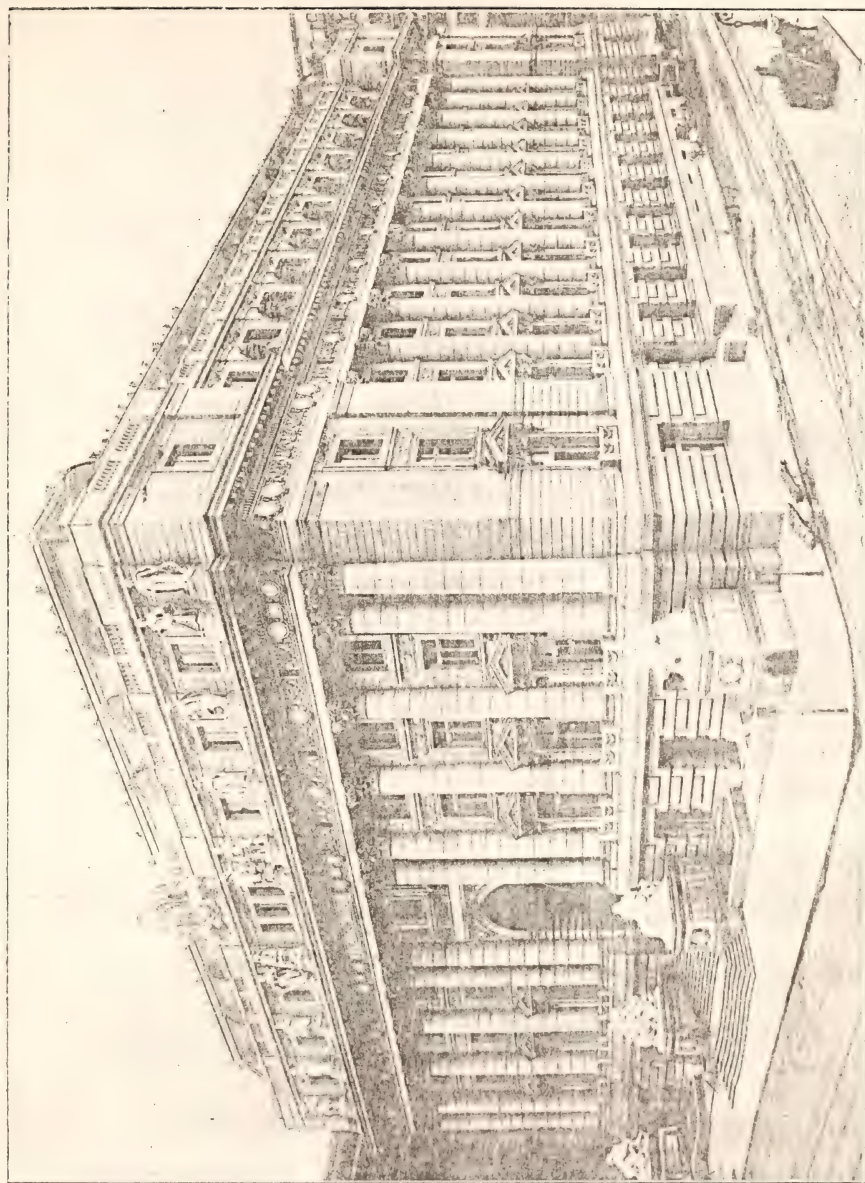
THIS TABLET OF THE BATTLE OF THE  
 FORT OF AMSTERDAM WAS ERECTED BY THE  
 BOARD OF THE CITY OF NEW YORK  
 IN THE YEAR OF 1899  
 TO COMMEMORATE THE BATTLE OF THE  
 FORT OF AMSTERDAM WHICH TOOK PLACE  
 ON THE 11TH OF SEPTEMBER 1674  
 BETWEEN THE ENGLISH AND THE  
 DUTCH  
 THE ENGLISH WERE LEADED BY  
 GEN. JAMES OGLETHORPE  
 AND THE DUTCH BY GEN. JACOB  
 VAN DER MEER

ON THIS SITE  
 FORT AMSTERDAM WAS ERECTED 1626  
 AND ITS SUCCESSOR  
 FORT GEORGE WAS DEMOLISHED 1790  
 TO COMMEMORATE THE EXPLORATION  
 OF THE HUDSON RIVER  
 BY HENRY HUDSON IN SEPTEMBER 1609  
 THE FOUNDER OF NEW AMSTERDAM  
 MAY 4 1626  
 AND THE ESTABLISHMENT OF  
 AMERICAN INDEPENDENCE 1776-1789  
 THIS TABLET IS PLACED BY  
 THE NEW YORK SOCIETY OF THE ORDER OF  
 THE FOUNDERS AND PATRIOTS OF AMERICA  
 SEPTEMBER 1909

TABLET ON SITE OF FORT AMSTERDAM, IN UNITED STATES CUSTOM HOUSE







UNITED STATES CUSTOM HOUSE, ON SITE OF FORT AMSTERDAM, NEW YORK CITY





The New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America deemed it desirable to commemorate certain important events in the history of our country by erecting a tablet upon the historic site of Fort Amsterdam, whereon the United States Custom House now stands.

The consent of the United States through its Treasury Department, which has custody of the building, was obtained, and the tablet was placed on the central westerly panel of the main stairway leading into the building.

The Hudson-Fulton Celebration Commission ratified the action of the Society and made the dedication of the tablet officially a part of its celebration in 1909.

The tablet is of bronze,  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet by  $4\frac{1}{2}$  feet in size, made by J. & R. Lamb.

Upon the upper part of the tablet is an outline representing the plan of Fort George, the successor of Fort Amsterdam, enclosing the following inscription in small letters:

This outline of the Fort is made on a scale of 12.5 feet to the inch from "A Plan of Fort George in the City of New York made at the request of the Honourable John Cruger, Esquire and the rest of the committee appointed to fix on a suitable place for building a Government House Made this 12th April 1774 by Gerard Bancker"

In the southwest bastion is the representation of the seal of the Society, and in the southeast bastion the representation of a magnetic compass. Below is the following inscription:

ON THIS SITE  
FORT AMSTERDAM WAS ERECTED 1626  
AND ITS SUCCESSOR  
FORT GEORGE WAS DEMOLISHED 1790  

---

TO COMMEMORATE THE EXPLORATION OF  
THE HUDSON RIVER  
BY HENRY HUDSON IN SEPTEMBER 1609  
THE FOUNDING OF NEW AMSTERDAM MAY 4 1626  
AND THE ESTABLISHMENT OF  
AMERICAN INDEPENDENCE 1775-1783  
THIS TABLET IS PLACED BY  
THE NEW YORK SOCIETY OF THE ORDER OF THE  
FOUNDERS AND PATRIOTS OF AMERICA  
SEPTEMBER 1909



An historical sketch of Fort Amsterdam by Edward Hagaman Hall, L.H.D., past Governor of our Society, was printed in the programme of the celebration issued by the Hudson-Fulton Celebration Commission, and is reprinted herein. In such programme and also in the circular published by the Society was printed the following :

## “ORDER OF EXERCISES

on dedication of the Society's tablet on the site of Fort Amsterdam at the United States Custom House, on Wednesday, September 29th, 1909, at eleven o'clock.

GEORGE CLINTON BATCHELLER, L.L.D., Governor of the Society, will preside and direct the unveiling of the tablet.

Address by GEN. STEWART L. WOODFORD, former Governor General of the Order, on “The Exploration of the Hudson River by Henry Hudson in September, 1609.”

Address by EDWARD HAGAMAN HALL, L.H.D., former Governor of the Society, on the “Founding of New Amsterdam, May 4, 1626.”

Address by THEODORE FITCH, former Governor of the Society, on “The Establishment of American Independence, 1775-1783.”

Address by MAJ-GEN. FREDERICK DENT GRANT, U. S. A., former Governor General of the Order and Governor of the Society, on presentation of the tablet to the United States.

Address by HON. WILLIAM LOEB, JR., Collector of the Port of New York, on accepting the custody of the tablet in behalf of the United States authorities.

Prayer by REV. EDWARD PAYSON JOHNSON, D.D., Chaplain of the Society.

There will be patriotic music between the addresses.

Immediately after the presentation a salute of thirteen guns will be fired from Fort Jay, on Governor's Island.

American Continentals, COL. HENRY D. TYLER, Commandant, and the Minute Men under command of MAJOR E. J. PAUL, in Continental uniform, will participate in the exercises as a Guard of Honor.”



Gen. Woodford, the President of the Hudson-Fulton Celebration Commission, in the multiplicity of duties devolving upon him during the celebration, was to his and our regret unable to meet this appointment, and Edward Hagaman Hall, L.H.D. Assistant-Secretary of the Commission and past Governor of the Society, consented to make the address upon the subject assigned to Gen. Woodford.

Major-General Frederick Dent Grant, U. S. A., received orders from the War Department a few hours before the dedication to report at Washington on that day, which prevented him from being present, and his place was filled by Col. Ralph E. Prime, D.C.L., L. L. D., past Governor of the Society and past Governor General of the Order, who presented the tablet to the United States.

About fifty Iroquois Indians, guests of the Commission, were present at the dedication. Dressed in their native costume, they were drawn up in a hollow square in front of the entrance to the Custom House, presenting a picturesque foreground.

It was a vivid reminder of the Colonial and Revolutionary periods in which their ancestors were participants. During the exercises they gave some interesting symbolic dances and tribal songs, and William Crow, one of their number, eighty-nine years of age, delivered a spirited speech in his native language.

Before and between the addresses the band played patriotic airs.

Many associates of our Order were present, and there was a large assemblage of guests and the public at the exercises.

The following is a report of the proceedings at the dedication of the tablet:

Governor GEORGE CLINTON BATCHELLER, LL.D. :

Associates, Ladies and Gentlemen : The longer I live, the more I am convinced, that history is simply and only and always his-story—the story of a man, a man who knew how to do things—and did them.

In passing through this city, within the last few days, I stood by Grant's Tomb on the Hudson, so that Hudson and Grant are now inseparable in my thought.

I saw the thirteen trees that Alexander Hamilton planted, and his tomb in Trinity Churchyard. I looked on statue after statue, of Washington and Lafayette, of Seward and Lincoln, of





Franklin and Ericson, and many others that grace our parks and open places. In front of St. Paul's I saw the marble slab that tells the story of Montgomery, and, just across the way, a tablet that records the birth of the first white child on this island. Turning the dusty pages of the yesterdays of life, we read that a few old guns gave the name of "Battery," to the lower end of Broadway. Around the corner, still called Bowling Green, the lusty Dutchman played tenpins. Golf and tennis, baseball and cricket, are our recreations today. A fence running from old Trinity to the East River, was built to keep the negroes in, and the Indians out, and we call it Wall Street to this day.

The population of our entire country, in those olden times, did not equal one-fourth the number of people in New York State today—and who will dare to prophesy the future of our country one hundred years from now? This building, massive and magnificent as it is, may not be here, but this tablet will remain to tell the wholesome and heroic story of Henry Hudson's life. We are the heirs of all the ages; and all the ages, yet unborn, are to be our heirs. God buries his workmen, but the work goes on.

Three hundred years ago, and we are living in the days of Good Queen Bess, of Shakespeare, Rare Ben Jonson, Milton and Bacon.

Another hundred years, and the century finds us shaking hands with old Ben Franklin, John Hancock, Thomas Jefferson, and George Washington.

The hundred years just come and gone, have been eventful in that we have become a great nation, and the century is full of Tennyson and Carlyle, of Emerson and Cooper, of Macaulay and Motley, of Dickens and Thackeray and Longfellow.

"Until the dead alone seem living,  
And the living alone seem dead."

I grow reminiscent, and reluctantly relinquish memory, but the programme defines my position and limits my time.

Before I proceed further I would say that I am sure you will agree with me in my regrets that owing to the great burden and various functions that press so heavily upon General Stewart L. Woodford, President of The Hudson-Fulton Celebration Commission, it will be impossible for him to be with us and take part in the exercises this morning. General Woodford desires that I express for him his regrets.



I am highly honored and proud of the duty I have to perform in presenting to you Dr. Edward Hagaman Hall, formerly Governor of this Society, my friend and predecessor, who will now address to you a few remarks on the exploration of the Hudson River by Henry Hudson, in September, 1609, and the founding of New Amsterdam, May 4th, 1626. (Applause.)

Dr. EDWARD HAGAMAN HALL :

Mr. Governor, Associates, Ladies and Gentlemen : We meet here today to commemorate, by this enduring bronze, three important events in the history of our City, State and Nation ; the first exploration of our queenly river by Henry Hudson, the founding of our imperial city by the Dutch, and the achievement of our national independence. Of the first two events it is my pleasurable duty briefly to speak.

In these days of conflicting claims by rival explorers it may not be amiss, on this occasion, to say a word concerning Hudson's title to fame as the first European explorer of the river which bears his name. A few days ago ground was broken in Battery Park for a monument to Verrazzano, who entered our harbor in 1524. We should feel indebted to our French and Italian citizens for their enterprise in erecting that monument, for it serves to emphasize the wide difference between the achievement of the Italian navigator who sailed under French auspices, and that of the English navigator who sailed under the Dutch. Verrazzano entered New York harbor but did not explore the river, and no beneficial results ensued from his brief stay. Henry Hudson explored the river to the head of navigation, made its resources known to the world, opened it up to civilization, and made his knowledge useful to mankind.

Among the many proofs that Hudson was the first European thoroughly to explore the river, there is one convincing fact which may be stated in a few words. The declared object of the great navigator's voyage of 1609 was to find a passage to the Orient by the northeast or the northwest. When baffled by the Arctic ice, he deliberately turned his prow westward to seek a passage to the western sea which was believed to exist in the latitude of 40 degrees, and he entered our river in the firm belief, based on guesswork maps of the period and the hearsay advice of Captain John Smith, that it led to the western sea.



Now, through his association with the English Muscovy Company, and with that group of famous geographers who made Amsterdam at that time the center of geographical knowledge, Hudson was conversant with all the discoveries of English and Continental navigators prior to that time. If, therefore, any European had previously explored the river, Hudson would have known that it did not lead to the Orient, and he never would have entered it. The very fact that Hudson explored our river under the circumstances, is indubitable proof of the priority of his exploration, to which might be added other evidences too numerous to mention on this occasion.

We honor Hudson's memory today for two reasons : First, he has given us a noble example of courage of conviction which is the basis of all right living. He had not only physical courage to brave great and unknown dangers, but he had also the moral courage to maintain his convictions, even in the face of death. No soldier upon the battlefield, no martyr at the stake, has ever been glorified by a more heroic end than that of the great navigator, who, because he would not yield his beliefs and convictions to a mutinous crew, was set adrift in the dreary waste of Hudson's Bay, to perish by the slow tortures of freezing or starvation. Our first debt to Hudson, then, is for his example.

Our second debt is a material one. He is a benefactor of his race who makes the lives of his fellowmen more worth living. Hudson opened up to civilization a land of which he said : "It is as pleasant a land as one need tread upon. The land is the finest for cultivation that I ever in my life set foot upon." This land has since become a land of peaceful industry and happy homes. A great and prosperous people now inhabit it, and the world is happier and better for the civilization that has grown up within these once savage borders. Truly, Henry Hudson was a benefactor. Truly we owe his memory a great debt of gratitude.

Our tablet commemorates next the founding of New Amsterdam. When Rome and Athens were hoary with age, when London Tower was moss-grown and lichen-covered, and when the origins of the capitals of the Orient were lost in the myths of mythology, New York was yet unborn ; and the islands which gem our waters were yet in their native beauty as in the day of Creation. The industrious beaver built his dam in the



neighboring brook now covered by the dry pavements of Beaver Street. The native wild men drew up their canoes on the neighboring shores. Then came the magic working voyage of Hudson; and close after him the industrious but transient traders, and then, less than 300 years ago, came that little band of Dutch pioneers who on this spot erected the first permanent structure on Manhattan Island—Fort Amsterdam. Within the four walls of that little fortress, the Metropolis of the West was born. We stand therefore at the cradle of our beloved city. We stand at a sacred place. The little princess, born here of the free blood of the Dutch republic has grown to be the Queen of the West. She sits on her throne. She opens her shining gates to the rising sun. The argosies of the world bear their treasures to her feet, the people of all nations gather within the borders of her benignant hospitality. Her domain has become "the crowning city," whose merchants are princes, whose traffickers are the honorable of the earth.

O city of our home, as we stand here at the place of thy nativity, in this great festival of our happiness, and reverently dedicate this tablet in memory of thy birth, we dedicate ourselves to thee in loving and loyal devotion.

Our hearts, our hopes are all with thee;  
Our hearts, our hopes, our prayers, our tears,  
Our faith triumphant o'er our fears,  
Are all with thee—are all with thee."

(Prolonged Applause.)

Governor BATCHELLER:

It gives me great pleasure to have the honor to introduce to you Theodore Fitch, former Governor of this Society, who will address you on the subject of "The Establishment of American Independence, 1775-1783." (Applause.)

THEODORE FITCH:

Mr. Governor, Associates, Ladies and Gentlemen: On the 9th of July, 1776, New York received news that Congress had adopted the Declaration of Independence by the vote of twelve of the Colonies, New York not voting as her delegates had not received instructions. On the evening of the same day by order of Washington, it was read before every brigade of his army then stationed in New York. The news was received with enthusiasm, and the leaden statue of George III, which stood directly in front of this spot only a few feet distant, was pulled down.





In a general order issued the next day Washington condemned the act as riotous, but nevertheless the statue was down, and some of the fragments were afterwards melted into bullets for the patriots to use against the British.

The Convention of New York in session at White Plains on the 10th of July, 1776, ratified the Declaration of Independence and instructed their delegates in Congress to vote for it. The Thirteen Colonies were now a unit in the struggle for independence.

In the summer of 1776 Fort George witnessed a sad spectacle. It looked on Staten Island on which Gen. Howe's army of 25,000 men was encamped. It saw Lord Howe's powerful fleet in the harbor. It saw 20,000 British troops carried across the Bay and landed at Gravesend on their march to capture Washington's army. It looked on Brooklyn Heights where Washington was entrenched with 8,000 men, while Stirling and Sullivan with 5,000 raw recruits a little further down awaited the attack of Howe's veterans.

It was the 27th of August, 1776. Howe had routed Stirling and Sullivan after desperate fighting. The disastrous battle of Long Island had been fought.

Howe moved up his army to besiege Washington at Brooklyn Heights, confident, with his superiority of forces and command of the water, that Washington with his army, then of 10,000 men, there entrenched, could not escape.

On the night of the 29th by a most masterly retreat in the darkness and fog, without alarming the enemy, Washington brought his entire army safely across the river, and foiled Howe's plan to capture his army, which, if successful, would doubtless have ended the war then and there.

Fort George, which was garrisoned by British troops from the 15th day of September, 1776, when Gen. Howe took possession of New York City, until the 25th day of November, 1783, witnessed other momentous scenes.

On the day it witnessed the evacuation of British troops from the City of New York and the end of British dominion over the Thirteen Colonies.

Before leaving, the British soldiers nailed their colors to the staff in the fort, knocked off the cleats and greased the pole to prevent the unfurling of the American flag. But the attempt was futile. John Van Arsdale nailed on the cleats, sanded the



greased pole, ascended the flag-staff, tore down the British colors and raised the Stars and Stripes which floated from the Fort before the British fleet had left the lower bay.

The American army took possession; and, from Fort George, Washington reviewed his troops on the same day.

Only a short distance from the fort at Fraunces' Tavern on the 4th of December, 1783, Washington delivered his farewell to his officers, walked to Whitehall and took a barge to Paulus Hook, on his way to Annapolis to surrender his commission to the Continental Congress.

The brief period assigned for my remarks prevents any extended history of the American Revolution.

From the battle of Lexington, on the 19th of April, 1775, when untrained minute-men defeated British veterans and drove them in panic to the shelter of their entrenchments, to the surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown, on the 19th of October, 1781, the story of American valor is written in living letters.

What memories of heroic conflict are associated with the names Bunker Hill, Fort Washington, Trenton, Princeton, Ticonderoga, Bennington, Oriskany, Brandywine, Bemis Heights, Monmouth, Stony Point, King's Mountain, Cowpens, Guilford, Eutaw Springs? What recollections of privations are evoked by the mention of Valley Forge, and of suffering and martyrdom by the name of the prison ship "Jersey" anchored in the Wallabout just across the river, and the Provost Prison in the City Hall Park under the jailor Cunningham?

Among the generals who contributed much to the establishment of American independence, and whose names are on "Fame's eternal bead-roll worthy to be filed," I will mention merely Greene, Lafayette, Steuben, Stirling, Sullivan, Schuyler, Montgomery, Morgan, Putnam, Herkimer, Wayne, Marion, Sumter, Kosciusko and the first admiral of our navy, the heroic John Paul Jones.

We honor the private soldiers who fought the battles of the Revolution, actuated by the purest patriotism. They were without adequate pay, poorly fed, insufficiently clothed and equipped, but they were patriots who fought for liberty and country.

But the man of all others who was instrumental in establishing American independence was Washington.



His patriotism was unsullied. His military ability and generalship was of the highest order. He was superior to the petty jealousies and intrigues of Lee, Gates, Mifflin, Wilkinson and Conway. He patiently obeyed the orders of an inefficient and vacillating Congress and finally prevailed upon it to adopt a right policy. He quieted the murmurs of an ill-fed and poorly equipped army, healed the dissensions and bickerings of a militia which had all the jealousies and independence of restraint which characterized the sections from which they came, prevailed on them to renew their short terms of enlistment, sustained their courage in defeat, and welded untrained militiamen into an army of seasoned veterans. With an inferior force, he was always confronted with the problem how to outwit, baffle and capture a superior army.

He succeeded in defeating the various plans of campaign of the enemy, such as that for the capture of his army before his retreat from Long Island to White Plains, across New Jersey and to the entrenchments at Morristown, also the plans to separate New England from New York and the other Colonies, and the possession of the Hudson and the Mohawk Valleys, and the capture and separation of the Southern Colonies. Especially do we honor him for the skillful plan arranged with Rochambeau, and the wonderful strategy with which he completely deceived Clinton and left him unsuspecting at New York until too late, while he swiftly marched his army from Westchester County four hundred miles to join the French fleet and army awaiting him at Yorktown and capture Cornwallis and his army of eight thousand men and end the war.

De Grasse, Rochambeau and Lafayette did their part well, and Cornwallis, unable to defend himself longer, sent his flag of truce to propose capitulation on the 17th of October, 1781, exactly four years to a day from the surrender of Burgoyne at Saratoga, which is named by Creasy among the fifteen decisive battles of the world. The surrender of Cornwallis was on the 19th of October, 1781, and there was practically no more fighting between the regular forces.

When the patriots fired their muskets at Lexington it was not for separation from England, although it was armed rebellion. Very few then thought of anything but the redress of grievances, and to remedy the abuses to which the Colonies had been subjected by George III. Their efforts were to establish





a policy of toleration and proper protection of their interests, and recognition of their rights as English subjects. No taxation without representation was the chief demand. But events moved rapidly, and the people soon became convinced that independence was necessary to preserve their self government, and the Declaration of Independence followed. Thenceforward the war was fought for independence. Rebellion had become revolution, and the revolution was justified by success. After independence had been won, the Thirteen Colonies under the Articles of Confederation were a league of independent states bound together with a rope of sand, without national power or authority, and it was not until the adoption of the Constitution which became operative in 1789, that the United States became in reality a nation strong and powerful as well as independent.

Today we welcome all the nations represented at the Hudson-Fulton Celebration. Among them we greet the Netherlands which sent the "Half Moon" to these waters three hundred years ago, and which established on Manhattan Island civil and religious liberty and toleration.

We welcome Germany which sent to aid us in the Revolution that trained soldier Baron von Steuben, who rendered such efficient service in drilling our raw recruits and making our army fit to cope with the veterans opposed to it.

We welcome France, our ally in the Revolution, whose fleet and army co-operating at Yorktown made the surrender of Cornwallis a necessity, and whose battleships fitly named Justice, Truth and Liberty, have now come to do us honor.

But especially, now that the resentment and bitterness of the Revolutionary struggle have faded away, do we welcome England to our celebration, and her fleet again in our harbor with the Inflexible commanded by Admiral Seymour leading her powerful battleships, and coming not as our foe but our friend and honored guest.

As Founders and Patriots most of our Order descend from the original English colonists, and we are proud of English institutions and English laws, of her language and literature, which are our common heritage. All of the glorious history of England before her colonists settled in this country is ours, and as Americans of English descent we glory in all of it that an Englishman can glory in.



The standards of our Order are two—one is the American Flag, the other is the Cross of St. George, the red cross on the white ground surmounted, however, by thirteen blue stars, and both command our admiration and regard. We wear with pride as the insignia of our Order the button which represents the Cross of St. George.

England's glory, with all that it represents, is ours, and as American citizens we rejoice that we are kinsmen whose sympathies and aspirations are in accord, and that the destinies of the United States and of England appear now to be linked together to enhance the welfare and happiness of millions of the English-speaking people, and for the benefit of the entire Anglo-Saxon race, and the advance of civilization. (Applause.)

Governor BATCHELLER :

Ladies and Gentlemen : We have here a unique assemblage of aborigines, natives of this State. Dr. Hall will tell us what their ceremony consists of. He is well versed in the history of the Indians.

Dr. EDWARD HAGAMAN HALL :

Mr. Governor, Ladies and Gentlemen : The Indians who are here with us are real Indians ; they are not white people painted up for this occasion. They represent the real "first families of New York." They are the descendants of the Iroquois Indians, or the Five Nations, sometimes called the Six Nations when there were six nations. They are now going to give you one of their ceremonial songs and one of their ceremonial dances ; and I wish to say to you, so you may appreciate what they are doing, that this is not a show.

They have been brought here by Mr. Moore for the Hudson-Fulton Celebration Commission, with the idea that we are celebrating a great ceremony in honor of the birth of this city. They have therefore come here, not as a side-show, but in a religious spirit to a great and wholesome celebration. They have been brought here to live part of their lives over again. Their ancestors were the controllers of the Indians who lived on these islands. Their ancestors gathered here before the Fort and were in the Fort to make treaties. Therefore, for 300 years their descendants have been on this spot. As I have said, they are here, not as an exhibition or as a show, but to repeat some of their ceremonial which has been handed down to them.



They are going to give a song called "The Prairie Song" and a ceremonial dance called the "Feather Dance."

(Ceremonies by the Indians.)

Dr. HALL:

That dance has never before been given outside the reservation on which those Indians live.

The oldest Indian here is William Crow, who is 89 years old, whom I have the honor now of introducing to you. (Applause.)

William Crow spoke in his native language clearly and emphatically for about five minutes, a small portion of his address being translated into English as follows:

Ladies and Gentlemen: I am glad to be here with you on this occasion. I am glad to see so many people here to see us, this small band of Indians left here to be in this celebration. We leave it all to the Great Spirit, to our Great Father, that we should live happily henceforth together. That is all we have to say; and I thank the gathering for your kind attention. (Applause.)

Governor BATCHELLER, after directing the unveiling of the tablet, said:

Late yesterday afternoon I received a despatch from Major-General Frederick D. Grant, of the United States Army, that he has been called unexpectedly to Washington, D. C., and expressing his regret that he could not be present to present this tablet to the United States. But I am happy to say we have with us this morning a veteran, the founder of this Order, a man who is always ready at a moment's call, our Past-Governor and Past-Governor-General. I take pleasure in introducing to you Col. Ralph Earl Prime.

Col. RALPH EARL PRIME, D.C.L., LL.D.:

Mr. Governor, Associates, Ladies and Gentlemen: We are met here today to unveil a tablet which shall last when we, like all our ancestors, have passed away. It shall tell to future generations and the children that shall succeed us in our places, the story of these events referred to today.

It has occurred to me that it is exceedingly fit that this part of the function should be at the hands of the Society which we



represent, a Society which, alone of all the American patriotic societies, takes up all of these events which relate to the history of our city and our country; and all of our associates claim their eligibility through descent from men who have participated in all of it.

In the midst of these festivities, it has seemed to me fit also that we should not forget the Providence that has run through all of the events which are celebrated here today, and which are memorialized in this tablet. They do not go back any of them to the beginning of America. Columbus far earlier in his exploration and discovery, never outstretched to the settlement of the City of New York, and the discovery of the Hudson River, yet there marched along our shores a Greater Sentinel than ever guarded camp, for the Almighty kept off the discoverer from these shores until He had prepared a people for it, whose descendants have since garrisoned it and made it what it is; until the Puritans of England, the Huguenots of France, the Walloons of Flanders and the Dutch of Holland, had been educated in the furnace of the adversity which came upon them, to make hardy men and women who should found this land for us, their descendants. We have gathered, I say to unveil this tablet. And now, Mr. Governor, as representing the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America, and in your name, we commit to the keeping of the Government of our great country, this bronze tablet which shall endure when we have passed away. (Applause.)

The United States fired a salute of thirteen guns from Fort Jay at Governors Island.

Governor BATCHELLER :

Associates, Ladies and Gentlemen : Our next speaker is a gentleman too well known for me to elaborate my remarks. He is known throughout our land. You will now hear from New York's Collector of the Port, and I have the distinguished honor of introducing to you Hon. William Loeb, Jr. (Applause.)

Hon. WILLIAM LOEB, Jr. (Collector of the Port of New York):

Governor Batcheller, Members of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America :—As custodian of this building which is so intimately connected with the commerce of the country, and for the development of which, Hudson, by his exploration,





and Fulton, by his invention, so largely contributed, I take pleasure, on behalf of the Government, in accepting the custody of this Tablet, and I congratulate the members of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America upon the important work which they are doing for the country and posterity in marking historic sites such as this upon which we are assembled, and in commemorating events such as these we now are celebrating. (Applause.)

Governor BATCHELLER:

The closing exercises will be a benediction pronounced by the Rev. Edward Payson Johnson, D.D., the chaplain of this Society.

Rev. EDWARD PAYSON JOHNSON, D.D.:

God of our fathers! Who brought them safely across vast unknown seas, and delivered them from great perils and savage foes:—Who established them graciously in this goodly land, and in the time of oppression, invasion and treachery raised up for them faithful friends, and gave them victory and national freedom;—surely Thou hadst a favor, a merciful favor, unto our fathers, O Mighty King of Heaven and Earth! We therefore glorify Thee, and give thanks to Thee, for Thy wondrous and long-continued grace to them; and also for their changeless faith in Thy guardianship and guidance; for their devout reverence for Thy Holy word and Thy Holy Son; and for their sincere endeavor always to do the right. We glorify Thee for their sturdy virtues and fidelities. We rejoice that we are the sons of such sires.

Yet, O God Most Holy! strengthen us that we may not merely glory in our ancestry and our inheritance; but may also conscientiously and continually honor them! Deliver us utterly from the curse of the intolerant spirit. Preserve us wholly from the worldliness that measures man's value by his earthly goods, and contends that one's life doth consist in things he possesseth.

Increase in us more and more the self-control and calm fearlessness, the gracious goodness and gentle humanities which we so unaffectedly admire in Thy Dear Son Jesus. Help us, O God, to be persistently eager and passionately loyal in following after the things which are true, and honest and of good report.



Strengthen us steadfastly to long and labor for nothing less than bringing to all our Land, and all the earth, the Golden Age of Heaven, with its brightness and joy, its peace and purity. Bless us, O Holy God, in making us each one a blessing to all mankind. And to Thy name, Father, Son and Holy Spirit, we will ascribe the honor, the glory, the praise and the power, world without end. Amen.

Governor BATCHELLER :

There will be another ceremonial dance by the Indians before we separate.

(Ceremonial dance by Indians.)



## FORT AMSTERDAM.

Historical Sketch by Edward Hagaman Hall, L.H.D.

---

The site of the United States Custom House at the foot of Broadway possesses the unique distinction of being the Cradle of the Metropolis. When Peter Minuit, the first Director-General of New Netherland, arrived in 1626 and planted the first permanent colony on Manhattan Island, the first concern of the Dutch pioneers was to stake out a fort, under the direction of Kryn Frederick, an engineer sent along for this purpose. This fort—probably the first permanent structure raised on the island—was originally a blockhouse surrounded by palisades. It was located within the area bounded by Bowling Green, State, Bridge and Whitehall Streets, and was named Fort Amsterdam.

At that time it stood on the water front, the original water line coming down the west side of the Island approximately along the line of Greenwich Street, then bending southeastward across the corner of Bridge and State Streets, and thence following the southern and eastern sides of the Island along the line of Pearl Street. Battery Park, therefore, is all made land, or "gedempte," as the Dutch would say.

In 1633 Director-General Wouter Van Twiller began a new fort on a larger scale. It was about 300 feet long by 250 feet wide, required two years to construct, and cost 4,172 guilders. It was four-square, with a bastion at each corner. In 1642 an imposing two storied stone church was built within the fort. For many years the fort was the seat of government, the harbor of refuge and the place of worship, and the history of New Netherland and of Colonial New York could be written very fully from the events connected with this site.

With almost every change of dynasty the fort took a new name. When the English captured it in 1664 it was named Fort James. When the Dutch recaptured it in 1673 it was named Fort William Henry. In 1674, with the English again in possession, it was called Fort James again. In 1689, when James fled the throne and William and Mary ascended it, the Colonists, with delightful adaptability to circumstances and loyalty to the reigning monarch, promptly named it Fort William. In 1702, when good Queen Anne mounted the throne, the Colonists zealously attested their loyalty to her by giving it the name of Fort





Anne. So it remained until the Queen died in 1714 and George I. was proclaimed King, whereupon the fort was promptly rechristened Fort George. During the reigns of the three successive Georges the name of the fort remained unchanged.

Meanwhile the fort had been strengthened and reinforced by a battery extending in a semi-circle along the water from what is now the corner of Greenwich Street and Battery Place to about the corner of Whitehall and Water Streets. The full complement of the fort and battery was 120 guns.

For many years the fort was the seat of government over a wide region. In the days of New Netherland its jurisdiction reached from the Connecticut River on the east to the Delaware River on the west and south. In the days of Colonial New York its jurisdiction, overleaping intermediate New England, extended as far as Pemaquid, Maine, where there was a fort maintained from Fort George as a base.

For over 150 years the fort, under its various names, was the ceremonial center of the colony. Here the Indians gathered in all their barbaric picturesqueness to negotiate treaties with the white men. When the governors of New Netherland and New York were imported, and not homemade as now, this was their formal reception place and residence, and here one ceremony followed another, increasing in stateliness and splendor as the colony grew and the ornaments of government increased. Hither yearly upon the King's birthday the city officials "in their formalities" and the leading citizens repaired to drink the King's health amid salvos of artillery; and at other times, when the Colonists were less cordially disposed toward the Government, some of the most exciting incidents in the city's history were enacted under the frowning walls of the old fort. At last, when the British evacuated the city in 1783, Washington reviewed the triumphal American procession from the fort's dilapidated walls.

In 1790 the fort was demolished to make room for a Government House, which was intended for a Presidential Mansion. The removal of the National Capital from New York, however, relegated the structure to the uses of a Gubernatorial residence; and when New York lost the honor of being the State Capital the building was used as a custom house. Between that Custom House and the present Custom House one or two generations of commercial buildings have intervened:



## Publications of the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America

1. "The Settlement of New York," by George Rogers Howell, March 18, 1897.
2. "The Battle of Lexington," by Hon. John Winslow, May 13, 1897.
3. "George Clinton," by Col. R. E. Prime, December 15, 1902.
4. "Washington, Lincoln and Grant," by Gen. James Grant Wilson, April 6, 1903.
5. "Early New York," by Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt, January 15, 1904.
6. "Thomas Hooker, The First American Democrat," by Walter Seth Logan, February 19, 1904.
7. "Early Long Island," by Hon. Wm. Winton Goodrich, March 16, 1904.
8. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1904.
9. "The Philippines and The Filipinos," by Maj. Geo. Frederick D. Grant, December 10, 1904.
10. "Some Social Theories of the Revolution," by Theodore Gilman, January 31, 1905.
11. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1905.
12. "The Story of the Pequot War," by Thos. Egleston, LL.D., Ph. D., December 15, 1905.
13. "Distinctive Traits of a Dutchman," by Col. John W. Vrooman, February 23, 1906.
14. "An Incident of the Alabama Claims Arbitration," by Col. Ralph E. Prime, March 23, 1906.
15. "Banquet Addresses and Memoir of Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt," May 14, 1906.
16. "Constitution, By-Laws and Regulations of the Order, and List of Members of the General Court, with By-Laws and List of Members of the New York Society," November 1, 1906.
17. "Some Municipal Problems that Vexed the Founders," by Rev. Wm. Reed Eastman, December 14, 1906.
18. "A Vanished Race of Aboriginal Founders," by Brig. Gen'l Henry Stuart Turrill, U. S. A., February 14, 1907.
19. "List of Officers and Members of the New York Society," November 15, 1907.
20. "The Hudson Valley in the Revolution," by Francis Whiting Halsey, December 13, 1907.
21. "American Territory in Turkey; or, Admiral Farragut's Visit to Constantinople and the Extra-territoriality of Robert College," by Ralph E. Prime, LL.D., D. C. L., February 14, 1908.
22. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1908.
23. "Some Things the Colony of North Carolina Did and Did First in the Founding of English-Speaking America," by William Edward Fitch, M. D., December 11, 1908.
24. "Colonial Legends and Folk Lore," by Hon. John C. Coleman, January 20, 1910.
25. "The Origin, Rise and Downfall of the State of Franklin, Under Her First and Only Governor—John Sevier," by William Edward Fitch, M. D., March 11, 1910.
26. "Proceedings on the Dedication of the Tablet Erected by the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America, on the Site of Fort Amsterdam at the United States Custom House, New York City," September 29, 1909.



Proceedings  
of the  
Fourteenth Annual Banquet  
of  
The New York Society of the  
Order of The Founders and  
Patriots of America

---



---

Held at the Hotel Manhattan, New York City,  
May 13, 1910, in Honor of the Officers  
of the General Court and in Commem-  
oration of the 303rd Anniversary  
of the Founding of Jamestown



Officers of the New York Society Order of the  
Founders and Patriots of America

*Governor*

GEORGE CLINTON BATCHELLER, LL. D.,  
143 Fifth Avenue, New York.

*Deputy Governor*

THEODORE GILMAN,  
55 William Street, New York.

*Chaplain*

REV. EDWARD PAYSON JOHNSON, D. D.,  
New Brunswick, N. J.

*Secretary*

WILLIAM EDWARD FITCH, M. D.,  
320 Manhattan Avenue, New York.

*Treasurer*

MATTHEW HINMAN,  
416 Broadway, New York.

*State Attorney*

GOODWIN BROWN,  
135 Broadway, New York.

*Registrar*

JOHN C. COLEMAN,  
100 Broadway, New York.

*Genealogist*

LOUIS ANNIN AMES,  
99 Fulton Street, New York.

*Historian*

REAR ADMIRAL EBENEZER S. PRIME, U. S. N.,  
Huntington, Long Island.

*Councilors*

1908-1911

COL. RALPH EARL PRIME, Yonkers, N. Y.  
EDGAR ABEL TURRELL, New York.  
CHARLES W. B. WILKINSON, New York.

1909-1912

MAJOR GENERAL FREDERICK D. GRANT, U. S. A.  
THOMAS REDFIELD PROCTOR.  
RICHARD HUBBARD ROBERTS.

1910-1913

GEN. STEWART L. WOODFORD.  
THEODORE FITCH.  
COL. GEORGE E. DEWEY.





“Steadfast for God and Country”



The New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America held its fourteenth annual Banquet at the Hotel Manhattan, New York, on the evening of Friday, May 13th, 1910, in honor of the General Court of the Order, and in commemoration of the 303d Anniversary of the Founding of Jamestown. The Banquet Committee in charge consisted of the following:

*Banquet Committee*

GEORGE CLINTON BATCHELLER, L.L. D., CHAIRMAN

LOUIS ANNIN AMES

JOHN C. COLEMAN

CHARLES EDEY FOY

THEODORE FITCH

WILLIAM EDWARD FITCH, M. D.

THEODORE GILMAN

EDWARD HAGAMAN HALL, L. H. D.

CLARENCE ETTIENNE LEONARD

COL. RALPH EARL PRIME, L.L. D., D. C. L.

RICHARD HUBBARD ROBERTS

EDGAR ABEL TURRELL

CHARLES W. B. WILKINSON

Governor Batcheller presided and was Toastmaster at the Banquet.

The officers of the General Court elected at its Annual Meeting, held at the Governors' Room in the City Hall, New York, on the same afternoon, and the Past General Officers of the General Court were invited to attend the Banquet as the guests of the New York Society, and most of them were present.

All of the State Societies were represented, and many ladies were present.



The following is the list of the regular toasts as printed on the menu.

### INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS

GOVERNOR GEORGE CLINTON BATCHELLER, L.L. D., Toastmaster.

### "THE ARMY"

MAJOR-GENERAL FREDERICK DENT GRANT, U. S. A.,  
Past Governor and Governor-General.

### "THE NAVY"

GENERAL JAMES GRANT WILSON, D. C. L.

### "PATRIOTISM"

COLONEL ROLLIN SIMMONS WOODRUFF,  
Ex-Governor of Connecticut and Past Governor-General.

### "ORDER OF FOUNDERS AND PATRIOTS"

COLONEL RALPH E. PRIME, LL. D.,  
Past Governor and Past Governor-General.

### "THE FOURTH ORDER OF GREATNESS"

REVEREND EDWARD PAYSON JOHNSON, D. D.,  
Past Chaplain-General.

### "THE GREAT REPUBLIC"

HONORABLE WALTER M. CHANDLER.

At the Banquet the following addresses were delivered in response to the regular toasts, the publication whereof in pamphlet form was directed by the Council of the Society.

THE TOASTMASTER: Associates and Guests, before we proceed with the regular order of exercises, I will ask the Secretary to read a few letters received in the past few days.





THE SECRETARY (Reading)  
"HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF LAKES  
FEDERAL BUILDING, CHICAGO, ILLINOIS.

May 8, 1910.

TO THE GOVERNOR GENERAL

*My Dear Mr. Batcheller :*

"In reply to your very kind letter, I hasten to express to you and to the others of the General Court, my very deep appreciation of the high honor paid me in my nomination as Governor-General of the Society of Founders and Patriots of America. I shall, of course, be most proud to be elected and I send to you all my very great thanks, which words inadequately express.

"With reference to the banquet to be given on May 13th, by the New York Society, I am truly disappointed to find since writing you last, that it will be impossible for me to be with you then. Since my first letter a change has been made, because of General Wood being sent to South America on a special mission, and the War Department has notified me that I am not to take command of the Department of the East until General Wood's return, which will be, as now thought, between the 6th and 15th of June, possibly.

"It would indeed have been a particular pleasure to me, to have been with you at your annual banquet, May 13th, and I can only express to you, one and all, my great regret that this will be impossible.

"With my regards and grateful thanks for your thought of me, which has touched me deeply.

"Believe me, my dear Governor,

Yours faithfully,

FREDERICK D. GRANT."

(Applause.)

THE SECRETARY: (Continuing reading)

"NAVY YARD, NEW YORK.

"Owing to unforeseen and uncontrollable circumstances Rear Admiral Leutze is compelled to withdraw his acceptance of the



kind invitation of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America for their banquet on the evening of the Thirteenth of May.

30th April."

THE SECRETARY (Continuing)

"THE WHITE HOUSE

Washington, May 7, 1910.

*My Dear Sir :*

"Your letter of the 6th of May has been received and I thank you in the President's behalf for the kind invitation you have been good enough to extend to him. I would say, however, that the President has been obliged to cancel his engagement in New York on the 12th of May, and he regrets therefore his inability to attend the banquet of the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America, on May 13th.

Very truly yours,

FRED. W. CARPENTER,

Secretary to the President." (Applause.)

THE SECRETARY: (Continuing):

"STATE OF NEW YORK

EXECUTIVE CHAMBER

ALBANY.

April 12, 1910.

"MR. GEORGE CLINTON BATCHELLER,  
No. 130 Fifth Avenue,  
New York City.

*My Dear Mr. Batcheller :*

"Your letter of the 11th instant has been received and I thank you for your cordial invitation to attend the dinner of the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America to be held on the evening of the 13th of May. It would give me great pleasure to accept the invitation, were it possible, but I cannot. I am unable to say when the Legislature will



adjourn, but the date you give will most likely be in the closing period of the session, when I cannot make such an engagement.

Very sincerely yours,  
CHARLES E. HUGHES." (Applause.)

THE TOASTMASTER: Dear Associates and Guests: We meet here, this evening, to mark another mile-stone in the onward journey of our Order. These annual gatherings brings us closer together and give to each of us the elbow-touch of comradeship in the journey of life. It is eminently fitting that we thus meet, face to face, to look backward on the yesterdays we have travelled and talked of that radiant future, which to some of us veterans is like the fabled pot of gold at the foot of the ever-receding rainbow.

The sturdy yeomanry who had borne the galling yoke through the iniquitous reigns of Charles the Second and James the first, left their native land to find a new home, made possible by the discoveries of Columbus and Cabot. It called for brave men, and braver women, to cross an unknown sea, to be tempest tossed on the wild Atlantic, but, with a firm faith in God, and an ample trust in themselves they never lost their grip on the hope of reaching this newly discovered land.

From the first landing of December 20th, 1620, up to 1657, there was an ever-increasing stream of emigration to the Virginias, Massachusetts Bay and the Connecticut Colonies, covering more than half a century, and embracing mainly the founding of this Western Continent.

I purpose to speak, briefly, of the message and the mission of Puritanism—of Gladstone's prophecy that in 2010 there would be six hundred millions of people in this land of ours, and Sheffield, Leeds and Manchesters would be scattered from ocean to ocean, and from the great Lakes to the Gulf. One day a traveler stopped his horse on the prairie land of what is now called the Western Reserve in Ohio. Putting his hand to his ear, he stood in a listening attitude. "What do you hear?" whispered his companion, fearing that the savages in their war paint, were in ambush near by. Then the traveller answered: "I hear the tramp, tramp, tramp of coming millions."

Associates, they have come, are coming, and will still keep coming, to the end of time.



If you will listen to the eminent men present here to-night, you will learn more of these things in an hour than you could in your own libraries in a month's reading.

In coming to this meeting to night I was forcibly and frequently reminded of that proverb of old Solomon, "Let your light so shine before men, that they may, if possible, be able to dodge your automobile"—and I was wishing all the way from my home to-night, that I could dodge this speech. One thing I am sure of, none of you will be able to accuse me of going beyond the speed limit. As I couldn't find a bushel, or even a pint pot, to hide my Governmental light under, I must let its electric rays fall upon your submissive souls,—and you can't dodge either,—that's one comfort.

An officer, going into battle, felt his legs tremble under him. He said "if these legs of mine only knew where I intend to carry them to-day, they'd shake a good deal more." Have patience, as the doctor's wife told her husband, and I won't detain you long.

Some one has said "Don't talk too much about yourself—other people can do that for you—and do it better."

This verse has been buzzing in my ears for many a day:

"The fire-fly is a brilliant bug  
But it hasn't any mind;  
It goes flying through the world galore,  
With its headlight on behind."

And I candidly confess to you that I have been having my headlight on behind for the past week or two. I have been halting between two opinions—the instructive, moving pictures of the past and the pregnant forces of the future beckon me.

I am an out and out optimist and I would like to dip my pen in sunshine and write over against the darkness of 1607 and 1620 the lessons taught us by the disappearing years. But of this anon.

In the last thirty days we have had breakfasts and luncheons and gatherings without number, and we have waked up from them, before the judgment—and are safely arrived at this hour. You remember the story of the man whose wife died, and, in taking the coffin down the crooked stairs, the pall bearers stum-





bled, the coffin lid came off and the dead woman opened her eyes—she had been in a trance! A year later she really died, and, in going down the same stairs, the weeping husband said: "Go careful now, don't let us have an accident the second time." We have no "deaders" here to-night and I am sure we shall have no accidents.

I don't want you to go away from here to-night with the idea that I am ungrateful or unwilling to thank you for the high honor of my re-election as Governor of the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America. You cannot imagine, associates, how pleased and proud I am to stand here, as your presiding officer, and say from my heart of hearts, again and again, I thank you, and deeply appreciate all that this office means to me. Rudyard Kipling could take a goose quill and a penny's worth of paper and ink and dash off his famous poem "The Recessional" which the London Times and his publishers thought cheap at ten thousand dollars. Outlay—a penny: income—a small fortune to a poor author. It was genius, plus industry. The Founders and Patriots are rich to-day out of a legacy of three hundred years. This island was once bought for twenty-four dollars and Plymouth Rock wouldn't have made some of us a decent door-step, but Greater New York and the old Bay State are here to speak for themselves, and we are here to speak for them also.

I feel so proudly elated, as I look into your faces, that I warn you, here and now, that I don't intend to die and I shan't resign. As a genial friend said to me not long ago when I told him that too much late lobster wasn't good for his digestion—"I don't intend to digest yet!" And so I say to you, that dying is the last thing I would think of doing, especially at my time of life, and I hope you will enjoy with me this glad coming together, every one of you, without remorse, retaliation or indigestion.

On these festive occasions, it is customary to rush back to what are called the "good old times." Associates, outside of a few fixed landmarks that we should never forget, I take no stock in those good old times. They prattle about the virtue and the valor and the vigilance of the long ago. It's all tommy-rot, and the most of it went to the bow-wows and the scrap-heap years and years ago.



As I have already remarked, I am an out and out optimist. I believe if we walk towards the light, the shadows of life will fall behind us. It's a beautiful thought to me that it is always morning somewhere in the world, and, if we could only follow the sun we should never know what night meant.

Over a half century ago I formulated a creed, that I would believe in a sunny spirit, a useful life and years of honest work --and that creed has brightened and cheered every toiling hour of my existence.

A professor in Yale tried to prove, last month, that this earth, whirling through space, is over four million centuries old!

We'll let it go at that--that's older than our Order. But of all those four million centuries, this is the best century; of all the years of this century, this is the best year; of all the days of this year, this is the best day. And of all the hours of this day of our Lord, May the 13th, 1910, this is the best hour; and of all the genial gatherings of gallant gentlemen and charming ladies, to-night in this favored land of ours, this is the genialest; the gladdest; the goodest and the greatest. (Applause.)

It is a great disappointment to the governor of the New York Society, as well as to those present here to-night, that we have not with us Major-General Grant. We have also been disappointed by receiving a letter a few days ago from the Admiral of the New York Navy Yard, sending regrets, that owing to matters without his control, he was called to Washington to-day and could not be with us here to-night.

I have been fortunate, however, to secure a dear friend of mine and I am sure many associates here to-night know the gentleman I shall call upon. We have with us an honored guest and able speaker, one well known to most of you, General James Grant Wilson (applause) who will merge the two themes, and speak of both, "The Army" and "The Navy."

Without General Wilson, this gathering would have been incomplete. During the late Civil War, back in the 60's, when some of us were younger men, a young Captain, a Union Captain, was hotly pursued by a squad of yelling "Rebs" and on reaching the river he sank exhausted on the deck of a gunboat anchored there. "Thank Heaven," he exclaimed, "I am safe. I think every man ought to have a gunboat in the house." And so, I say, the Order of the Founders and Patriots ought always to have a Wilson in the house. (Laughter.)



Associates and Guests, I have great pleasure in introducing General Wilson. (Applause.)

GENERAL JAMES GRANT WILSON: "Governor Batcheller, Ladies and Gentlemen—As the Governor has just informed you, at the eleventh hour I was called upon to respond to the dual toast "The Army" and "The Navy." Those who should have delivered them failed to keep faith; and although our gallant soldiers and sailors are generally ready to perform their duty, in this particular case, both seemed to have neglected the performance of even so pleasant a duty as dining and speaking at the annual banquet of the Founders and Patriots' Society.

It would seem to be superfluous for me to praise the deeds of the United States Army. That has won undying renown for itself. It has been recorded in history. In the earlier days the Army won victories at Saratoga and King's Mountains and Yorktown. Later on, in Mexico, they gained famous victories there over thrice their number at Buena Vista, and on many other Mexican battlefields. Coming down to the Civil War, history has no record of fiercer fighting than was seen at Shiloh and Chattanooga and Gettysburg, also at Vicksburg, and on many other well-fought fields.

Of Shiloh, I must speak a moment, to relate a particular incident which was a favorite with Gen. Grant, and which I heard him repeat on more than one occasion. A tall, handsome fellow, a member of a regiment which had just arrived at Shiloh, who had never heard a gun fired, and I believe had never had a gun in his hand until a few days previous, was so perfectly overcome with fear by the sudden onset of the Confederates and by seeing his companions falling all around him dead and wounded, that he threw down his gun and started for the rear as fast as his long legs would carry him. He passed Gen. Sherman, and the General said to him, "What are you running for?"—"Because I can't fly," responded the soldier. Fortunately Sherman's bullet missed him, and he lived to be one of the most gallant Colonels we had in our Western Army.

With Grant and Sherman and Sheridan I had the pleasure of serving. They were Generals whose fame will endure with those of any other soldiers of this century. In the armies that were reviewed in Washington on the 23d and 24th days of May, 1865, some 200,000 men, men whose drums had been heard in seven





Southern States; whose colors were torn and tattered with the shot and shell of 100 battlefields, presented a sight which no one who had the privilege of witnessing, will ever forget. Such a sight will probably never again be seen in this country. Breakfasting on one occasion with Mr. Gladstone, he was polite enough to draw out his guest to speak a little about the great War; and when he had finished his remarks, Mr. Gladstone rose and with his energetic manner, he said, "If I were an American, I should never forget the facts which have been stated to us by our friend from the other side of the Atlantic. That one million of armed men laid down their arms at the close of their prodigious four years' struggle, and returned to the paths of peace, without a single outbreak; and the other astounding fact that the enormous debt created by that great struggle is being paid off at the rate of one hundred million dollars per annum. Such a thing never occurred before. There is no record in history, for a moment, to be compared with that American record."

As for "The Navy," it has always done its duty. It has always covered itself with glory, from the day when Paul Jones fought the most extraordinary sea-fight that ever occurred in naval annals between two ships, capturing the enemy at the very moment when his own ship was sinking, boarding the "Serapis" and taking possession of her. From that day to this there have been many single ship actions, but none, I think, comparable to that one.

In 1811, Captain Hull of "Old Ironsides," the grand old frigate "Constitution," which is still preserved in Boston Harbor, met in the Capes of Delaware with Captain Dacres, of the "Guerriere." They exchanged the usual courtesies that take place between foreign ships when they meet, and after exchanging calls, they then exchanged dinners. And, as Dacres sat at Hull's table on the "Constitution," and they were smoking, Hull said to him in a half jesting manner, "Captain Dacres, it looks very much as if our two countries were going to get at loggerheads. If they do, look out for your ship if I catch her in the "Constitution." Dacres replied, "I think I can take care of my ship. It will be your duty, Captain Hull, to look out for the 'Constitution' that she is not captured."

Hull said, "If we do come together, I will capture you and take you into Boston Harbor or sink you."



Dacres answered, "I will bet you one hundred guineas that you won't take the "Guerriere."

Captain Hull said, "I am a poor man and I haven't got 100 guineas, but I will bet you a hat," and the wager was made.

When Dacres came aboard the "Constitution" to surrender his ship to Captain Hull, and offered his sword, Captain Hull said, "No, Captain Dacres, I do not want your sword, but I will trouble you for that hat." (Laughter and applause.)

Another story of Captain Hull is one I heard related by an officer who served with him on the "Constitution." He was a very old man at the time, but he related the incident with great gusto. He said when they came in sight of the English frigate, the "Guerriere," and she was discovered to be a man-of-war, Hull called his crew in after beating to quarters, and at the suggestion of Lieutenant Morris, he made them this speech. He said, "Men, that ship yonder is the British frigate "Guerriere," and if you capture her, every man of you will get \$100 prize money. Mr. Morris, 'beat the quarters.'"

Hull was not an orator, as you may perceive from this specimen of his, but he was a very plain man, uneducated, and one whose grammar was not at all times perfect. In thirty minutes after they met the "Englishman" she was a prize. She was captured, but she was so injured that he could not take her into Boston Harbor, and so at the request of Captain Dacres he sent a boat's crew to the "Guerriere" and recovered a Bible which had been given to Captain Dacres by his mother, and then the ship was set on fire and burned. Thirty years later, when Hull was in the Mediterranean and Dacres was in command at Gibraltar, he showed Hull every hospitality, as though he were a brother, and he took him into his drawing room and showed him the Bible that Hull had rescued from the "Guerriere."

A little incident was related to me in London a few years ago. It was repeated by a gentleman present at the dinner; and it was a naval dinner, and a young officer had taken occasion to speak sneeringly of the American ships. Old Sir Isaac Coffin, a British admiral, although a native of Boston, who still loved his native land, and having by request never been sent to serve against the land of his birth, arose when this young officer sat down, and said, "It is perfectly well known to all this company that I was born in Boston. It is also well known



to this company that I have always loved my native land and been proud of it, but I think I can safely say, I have always served my King and my adopted country faithfully. I cannot listen in silence to this undeserved abuse of America, and these utterly untrue statements made by Lieutenant ——; but I wish to say to him and to all present that if Captain Brooke in the "Shannon" had met my friend Hull in the "Constitution," there would have been no Tower guns fired, or "London bells" rung for any victory, for Hull would have taken the "Shannon" just as he took the "Guerriere." (Applause.)

Coming down to our own days, we have some men in our Navy whose records will compare favorably with almost any other in naval annals. I hardly think, with the exception of Nelson, that any greater sea captain lived in the nineteenth century than my dear friend Admiral Farragut. And not far behind him came David Porter. (Applause.) These men won for the naval service, undying renown, and there were many others, such as Worden, who was in the first fight between the ironclads, the "Monitor" and the "Merrimac." And then there was Captain Winslow, who, in the "Kearsarge," sunk the Confederate ram that had played so much havoc with our merchant shipping. No, I could go on further, but I will not, and for two reasons: First, I do not wish to tire you nor myself—as I am not very well just now. But I will say in conclusion, of these great men I have mentioned, and those I have not mentioned, to borrow the words of Coleridge:

"Their good swords rust  
And their bones are dust;  
But their souls are with the Saints I trust."

(Applause.)

THE TOASTMASTER: Associates, I am sure I have myself been highly entertained by the dual address that my friend General Wilson has made to-night, in regard to the Army as well as the Navy. It inspires my soul to have him speak so brilliantly of the Navy. My grandfather was on board of the frigate "Constitution" during the War of 1812, and I am glad to have General Wilson speak so favorably and so nobly regarding the action in battle and out of battle of her Commander, Captain Hull. (Applause.)



One of our distinguished associates, who has passed beyond the realm of this world, said:

"The patriot of to-day is the defender of his country's established institutions. The founder of to-day is the founder of new institutions to complete and perfect and adapt to living conditions the old. Our early founders fought for political liberty and for the independence which secured it."

The founders and patriots of to-day are perhaps a little hard to rouse to duty—a little slow to catch on—but when roused, when once awakened, they are true as the blade of Damascus steel, and hew to quite as sure a victory.

It gives me very great pleasure to introduce to you our past Governor-General, Colonel Rollin Simmons Woodruff, who will respond to the next toast—"PATRIOTISM."

COLONEL ROLLIN SIMMONS WOODRUFF (Ex-Governor Conn.).

*Governor Batcheller, Ladies and Associates:*

Before I proceed with what I have to say this evening, I want to express to you my appreciation of the very high honor which you placed me in two years ago. It is certainly an honor that any man may well be proud of; and I have certainly been proud of it, as proud of the honor of being the Governor-General of this Society, as any position I have ever held. (Applause.)

I always feel more or less embarrassed in appearing before a New York audience. I have on several occasions faced the people of New York, and the last time that I was at a gathering of this sort, your same Governor-General was the Toastmaster. That evening I was in a merry mood and tried to be funny, and tried to say funny things; but all I said was not taken in that way, and after I had taken my seat I thought that they took me seriously. So when the Governor-General asked me to speak here to-night, I asked him what I should talk about. He at once said "Patriotism."

I said to myself: "He is going to get me down where I will not try to be funny. He is going to give me a serious subject, and I think he is wise; as those of you who know me, know that I cannot be funny if I try."

An Irishman once said, "Every man loves his native land, whether he was born there or not." That, ladies and gentlemen, is what I call true patriotism.





This is a very large subject, and for fear that I should make some attempt at getting away from the serious side of the proposition, I will confine myself to what I have written down.

The foundation of America was laid in the finest patriotism that ever inspired a people to build a nation of freedom. The glory of individuals, that had been the course of all times, was not a part of the scheme of our National founders. They had had enough of kings, of royal families and of class distinction. They knew that if all men were to be free under the law, no man or set of men could be placed on an irremovable social pedestal, to be supported by the sweat of social or political slaves. Such had been the condition out of which the founders emerged into the democracy of the American wilderness. They would have no king to grant them crests; no court to pass in procession, according to the artificial ranking. They saw in the virgin forest of New England the material out of which to build the Republic, and they patiently waited their time. It was a study of the proposition of centuries solved by men who surrendered every personal ambition for the commonwealth of the race. It was life or death for them, with no possible compromise. It was to win all or to lose all that they came here, where money was useless and the wealth was locked up in the soil.

What must have been the force of the deep-rooted motives that made them come to this land? What must have been the courage and the faith that made them stick after they had come? Was there ever such a band in the course of human history?

How can we act the part that belongs to us unless we feel the spirit of that band coursing through our blood, mounting to our brains, and thrilling us with the motives that charge them with the matchless manhood?

How can we fulfill our part as their trustees without catching their terrible earnestness, and their solemn, sacred faith? If we are true to the plans laid down by the original builders, our country can withstand any attack from without, and crush any malice from within. Our ancestors prepared the way for this age, expecting that each generation would go forward with the work of constructing the civilization of liberty, of opportunity and civil equality, irresistible in its strength, and absolute in its security.

To begin with, they intended first that the mind should be free,



and that man should be enlightened. They believed that an educated race never could be enslaved, so the common school-house became the backbone of the State and the common democracy of childhood the soil in which patriotism would grow.

All the craft of those early, rough Americans was based on the truth and sunlight of education. Man was exalted to that high independence of thought that made him know that he was a part of the Government, and not a subject to be controlled against his will, or in spite of it. He felt that his personality was vital to the commonwealth, and that the Government depended upon the character of the unit out of which it was composed. This made the man great at the beginning. He began to expand as soon as he felt his personal interests in the welfare of all concerned. So deeply is this rooted in our American nature that no matter what crisis the people of the United States can be trusted to master the difficulties as fast as they appear upon the horizon of our history.

We will rise out of every peril. The cultivation of the individual character to the highest degree of independence and thought and action under just laws, made by us for our mutual advantage, is what makes our country supreme among the Nations of the world.

We must never escape from the meaning of individual responsibility. It is in that our Nation prevails, and in nothing else—the unit, the man, the citizen, the ruler of homes, the ruler of himself by the conduct of a commonwealth,

We must never surrender our rights nor neglect our responsibility. We do not all think alike, but we very soon become a part of the plan that we know to be right, whenever statesmanship takes the lead. We know a good thing and a good man in America. Let any man rise in our political system, whose purpose is right, and he will at once command the respect and support of the majority of the people. Every man who stands forth in public life as a champion of pure government, contributes a vast asset to the State and to the Age. And every man who violates the virtue of the people's confidence subtracts from our national greatness.

Those of us who claim to have come down from the Founders, assume by our very membership in this great Order, an immense



personal risk. We assume the station of leaders and educators, and our personal example is ever on exhibition before those who expect us to make good the traditions of our forefathers. We can no more escape from our task than they could escape the task they have assumed in the foundation. They assumed a risk when they came to this land. They burned their ships behind them. They cut loose from laws, conditions and customs, and gave themselves up to the perils of a savage hate in a wild and pathless wilderness.

They built their homes with the timber of hope, and anchored their structures upon the barren rock of Adversity. They had to make good or perish. Had they perished, America never would have been born, and liberty would have been strangled in childhood.

They reared a rugged race of men and women unequaled in the history of time. They carried out their determined plan because they were true to God and loyal to one another. No wonder the face of the Puritan was set with the sternness of sculptured marble and seamed with the lines of care. It was a serious game that they played, a serious state which he weighed, all that a mighty Nation might grow in the soil of Liberty.

Shall we not finish the father's work? Shall we not protect with our manhood every right and priceless legacy that comes down to us by the will of God? Shall we not be the stewards, indeed, and not treat with selfish indifference the inheritance that is only ours for a time?

I thank you. (Applause.)

THE TOASTMASTER: The next speaker I am to call upon to address us is the Founder of the "Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America," a lawyer of note, enlisted Private 5th New York Volunteer Infantry when the Civil War broke out. Held four regimental commissions, participated in thirteen pitched battles, severely wounded at the battle of Gaines Mill, twice promoted for signal bravery on the field of battle, as promulgated in general orders of Army Corps Headquarters, nominated March 4th, 1863, by President Lincoln to be Brigadier General—a man of conviction, fearless, kindhearted, and genial to a fault.





I have the honor of introducing to you Colonel Ralph Earl Prime, Past-Governor General, who will speak to us on "The Order of the Founders and Patriots. (Applause.)

COLONEL RALPH E. PRIME: Mr. Governor, Associates, Ladies and Gentlemen—It has been a revelation to me to-night to learn the other side of the character of the Governor of the New York Society of the Founders and Patriots of America. I must confess, as long as I had known him, I had never observed the humor that was possible in him until to-night.

I am glad to know that he is in that very characteristic respect, also an American.

It has often been a subject that has attracted my attention and my curiosity both abroad and at home, observing how we Americans differ from almost all other peoples in this matter of humor and story-telling. I am glad now that our friend to-night has shown us that he is all-round in that respect, and is not sober—meaning it, of course, in the best sense—all the time.

I have been asked to say something to you about The "Order of the Founders and Patriots of America." I well remember the formation of the Society—the New York Society—the Mother Society of all the others. If you will recall 1876 was a wonderful year, not only in our celebration then of the Centennial of our independence, but for the reason that an impetus was given in that year to this matter of the study of the history of our forefathers. With that Anniversary came the first of the Patriotic Societies, and they grew up about us, representing different ideas, year after year, until many of our fellow-citizens became enrolled in them, and they became the rallying points of a great army of patriots. Not of patriots only, however, for there sprang up also in that period, a society which did not count on patriotism, and which banked on its descent from the period of the trials of our early ancestors in America, without any association whatever with that other period which succeeded and out of which grew our position as one of the nations in the world. It seems that this was an anachronism, and that we Americans who thought so much of the deeds of our ancestors in the Founder period, should not think also of the patriotism of our ancestors in the Revolutionary period. And it was in recognition of that fault in one of those societies that sprang up, that our Society was formed, uniting in its requirements for membership,



not only a descent from the Founder period, but also through a line of patriotic ancestors in the Revolutionary period, who were active in some respects at least, in giving aid and comfort to the colonies in their shaking off of the rule of England, and establishing for themselves an independent land. And this Society was founded upon those two ideas. But I want you not to forget that with reference to the Founder period and the Founder ancestry, a distinction was drawn between those who came to this wilderness filled with savages, and who faced the dangers and bore the hardships at that time, as distinguished from others who came later, and whom we chose without intending any idea of obloquy to call "Immigrants." It was upon that idea that the Society was called "Founders," and that it was based upon a descent of its members from those who faced these dangers and endured these hardships, and came, not to a land that was settled and subdued for them.

And there was another idea that entered into it also. When we remember how from 1492 down to 1607, no settlement was made upon these Northern shores, but apparently God Almighty walked sentinel along our shores to keep off the Spanish and the Portuguese until He had trained in the religious throes of England, those spirits with whom He intended to settle this land, and to make it a land of Puritan principles.

And out of that grew the words of the preamble which was made unalterable in the institution of the Society :—Let me read it to you :

"Recognizing Almighty God as guiding our ancestors to this land, to establish of their descendants not a colony but an independent, sovereign Christian Nation, destined by Him to occupy a commanding place among the nations of the earth and to protect and defend liberty in all the Western Hemispheres; and

"Recognizing that the foundations of the nation were laid in the perils and the hardships of the first half century, by our ancestor settlers of that first half century, rather than in the years that followed; and

"Recognizing that necessary to that end for which our ancestors came, was the patriot progeny in the time of the Revolutionary struggle out of which our country came to be independent, and our Nation came into being; for ourselves and those who may associate with us, we have formed an association



founded on descent from such an ancestry, and from their patriot descendants."

The story is a short one, Mr. Governor, and it has been told. This is the Society which celebrates to-day in its annual meeting with the General Court of the Order, the settlement at Jamestown, May 13, 1607, the anniversary of the first settlement of the colonies, and in the annual meetings of its Societies on the 19th of April we celebrate the first battle of the Revolutionary War, out of which we came to be a nation.

Let us adhere, Associates, to the distinctions on which the Society is founded: That we came from those who risked their lives and their all to subdue a wilderness for their progeny, and to face the savages that were there before them, and the dangers that were involved in it, and that we also are proud to reckon among our ancestors as necessary to membership in the Order, those who in the Revolutionary period, sacrificed and risked all that they had, that they might win for us the independence of this Nation, which in these latter days God has made to be a commanding figure in the nations of the world. (Applause.)

THE TOASTMASTER: Associates and Guests—It is very comforting to know that an eminent divine can leave a foreign country like New Jersey, and come to our hospitable shores—to stop preaching to the sinners of New Brunswick and run over to find a quiet resting place for his soul among the saints of New York. (Laughter.)

We welcome him. He comes like a benediction after prayer. Our Past Chaplain-General, Associates and Guests, the Rev. Dr. Edward Payson Johnson, will now address his former congregation. His text is "The Fourth Order of Greatness." (Applause.)

REV. DR. EDWARD PAYSON JOHNSON: Mr. Governor and Associates, Ladies and Gentlemen: I fear that you, Mr. Governor, are taking great chances while under the spell and inspiration of this occasion, and of these fair ladies, and our good associates and this late hour, to call upon a preacher for a speech; for you know that persons of my guild are generally credited with being long-winded.

THE TOASTMASTER: It is early.

REV. DR. JOHNSON (Continuing): I notice that although the Governor said "It is early," yet he looked appealingly and anxiously toward me when he said it.





Apropos of this long-windedness, a good friend of mine, and a fellow craftsman, living in Newark, tells a story on himself, of an experience when he preached one Sunday morning for a neighboring pastor in East Orange. Everything went well until just before the sermon, when the choir sang, "O, Lord, defend us while we sleep"; and as though this were not suggestive enough, *after* the sermon they sang, "Some time, some time, we'll understand." (Laughter.) However, his experience was not so trying as that of an English rector who preached a great sermon, as he fondly fancied, at the opening of the General Assizes in his City. The Lord Chief Justice was present, with barristers and court functionaries and notables, a goodly company. After the service the rector, coming from the chancel, met the great man and said, "Ah! My Lord, how did you like my sermon?" "Passing well, sir; passing well. It reminded me so much of the peace of God which passeth all understanding; and like the mercy of God, I thought it would endure forever." (Laughter.)

You have already listened intently to several speeches, and so I feel I am somewhat at a disadvantage; and yet I must say that if needs must, I can follow the example of another preacher of Puritan times, who, beginning his sermon, noticed that some of his congregation were asleep, and promptly disavowed responsibility for their drowsiness in thunder tones; "My good friends, if I had been already speaking, and some were asleep, you might perhaps blame me for my dullness; but I have not yet begun. Wake up, and hear what I have to say!" (Laughter.)

I wonder whether any of you have heard of the old Canadian farmer, noted for his absent-mindedness, who beat his own record on one occasion when he went to town on business. The business was transacted with the utmost precision, but on his way homeward he became more and more firmly convinced that he had forgotten something. He could not think what it was, try how he would. Nearing his home, he became more and more strongly convinced that he had forgotten something. So three times he stopped his horse, and went carefully through his pocket-book, vainly seeking to discover what he had forgotten. In due time he reached home, and met his daughter who exclaimed, "Why, father, where have you *left mother*?" (Laughter.)





I am glad that the Committee having in charge the preparations for this banquet to-night *did not forget* the ladies, so that we have to-night the joy of their presence and the inspiration of their approval. Surely the best and most profitable meetings of our Order are those at which the ladies are not forgotten and left behind.

But, to the text which the Governor has announced, and to which I would speak.

England's greatest writer has said "Some men are born great; some achieve greatness, and some have greatness thrust upon them." There are those in this company to-night who were *born* great, for truly some measure of real greatness attaches to all worthily descended from Founder and Patriot sires; and some of this company to-night have also *achieved* greatness of their own through long years of strenuous, steadfast and self-denying service to country and mankind; but upon myself, as upon others here, greatness has been *thrust*, in the high privilege of speaking for a while to listening ears and sympathetic hearts.

Although it is like attempting to gild the refined gold to add anything to the words of Shakspeare, yet I shall presume enough to name a *Fourth Order of Greatness*; and this is the greatness which genuinely *appreciates* the greatness of the men and the deeds and the political movements of the present, not less than those of the past of our own American life. Surely he is pitifully small of sense and soul who, for the endeavor and manifest spirit of *anyone*, save of his own day, or kindred or party, has *no eyes* save those of hostile detraction and depreciation. The greatness of soul that can sincerely appreciate greatness and goodness, honesty and fearlessness *anywhere*, and seek for them and joy to find them *everywhere*, is a noble grace for us to cultivate; it will broaden our own horizon, and greaten our own spirits, and bring us into closer and more congenial relations with our fellow man.

Before daybreak this very morning, I saw that celestial visitor whose advent is calling so many nowadays from their slumbers, to gaze upon its weirdly luminous and mysterious beauty; and that vision suggested to my mind another vision which only appreciative eyes can see, and that is, our radiant and nobly rounded Ancestry, whose influence streaming down far succeeding years like Halley's comet, broadens more and more as it



farther recedes and yet, unlike it, retains the full measure of its brightness and imperishable beauty. (Applause.)

Mr. Governor, we glory in our Founder and Patriot ancestors—fathers and mothers—and in the great privilege of having such Ancestry. Theirs was a broad-gauged, four-square, fearless steadfastness of soul not easy for us to equal, impossible for us to excel. They grew up from a simple, serious childhood, through rigorous training and harsh privation; they knew how “to suffer and be strong”; and their unflinching loyalty to principle and to God’s Word, and their exalted and self-sacrificing patriotism, are supremely worthy of reverent imitation. It is well for us that we *are* large-souled enough genuinely to appreciate their virtues, and reverently eulogize them.

But, we do not admit that the best of our American life in leaders, or institutions, or rank and file, like the best of the ripened crop in the potato field, is *buried in the ground*. No, sir; we do not admit that. We believe that in many respects the present is better than the past; and the *best is yet to be*, provided we build upon the best results of the past with the best material of the present, and live for something better than mere present selfish gain or gratification. (Applause.)

Our American system—unlike any other in the world—is a Democratic Republicanism, or a Republican Democracy, whichever you will—I use both words, of course in the broad sense; and there is being slowly wrought out a compound, a composite, or a blend, of the best and most enduring characteristics, Republican and Democratic. Dominating principles and tendencies are changing; and American methods, conditions and tendencies will be vastly better in the aggregate twenty-five years hence than they are at the present time; just as things are now vastly more wholesome than they were twenty-five years ago. And that the best results may be realized as early as possible, we must give a more generous appraisal and more just appreciation to *the man on the other side*, to his aims and his activities.

But, alas, there are persons—and not a few of them in this land of ours—whose work and spirit are utterly antagonistic to the best and broadest-minded Americanism. How often our attention is clamorously demanded by demagogues, universal critics and scolds, who are not more haughtily self-conceited than brutally censorious! How many there are who deny that



the past has bequeathed anything to call out their gratitude! Nothing comes to them worth anything save from their own ingenuity, or family, or fortune! The spirit of the muckraker is abroad in the land. He is not peculiar to our day, nor pre-eminent in our land; but at the present time he is tremendously and offensively in evidence, and the chief products of his activity seem to be discord, harm and hatred.

An old deacon, very pronounced and very pugnacious in his prohibition principles, was sometimes baited and jollied by the young people for his rabid temperance principles. It mattered nothing to the deacon even if St. Paul did urge Timothy to take a little wine for his stomach's sake and for his oft infirmities; but matters came to a climax one day when a fair young questioner said, "But, deacon, didn't the Lord Jesus make the water wine at the marriage feast in Cana of Galilee?" And the deacon's reply made everyone gasp: "Yes, yes, I know that very well; and I've always maintained that the Lord was *wrong* on that occasion." (Laughter.)

There is very much of the old deacon's blunt and opinionated intolerance in certain people to-day who cannot see anything good or praiseworthy in those who do not echo their sentiments, or vote their party ticket, or hold to their religious shibboleth. Pity 'tis that it is so. How much of vehement and vindictive denunciation we hear from certain individuals who are so comfortably cock-sure of everything, who remind one of Solomon's fool, who "was wiser in his own conceit than seven men that can render a reason!" If only these self-elected and gratuitous prosecutors could be forcibly and finally abated!

The average American to-day needs no other special culture *so much* as the culture of *largeness of soul*; that breadth of vision, that magnanimity, greatness of aspiration, greatness of charity and sympathy with men, which belongs to this "Greatness of the Fourth Order," as I like to term it.

It is a true principle, and prophecy which Russell Lowell has given us in the words:

"Be noble, and the nobleness that lies  
Sleeping in other men, but never dead,  
Will rise in majesty to meet thine own:  
Then wilt thou see it gleam in many eyes;  
Then will pure light around thy path be shed,  
And thou wilt never more be sad and lone."





So why not look for greatness and goodness in others than those of the past, or those whose eminence is secure beyond all dispute? Why not give just and generous appraisal to those not of *our* political party or church fellowship, or social order? How else can we develop a noble, high-minded manhood? How otherwise can we Americans impress the incoming throngs of foreigners with the inspiration of American ideas and principles?

Wholesale "kicking and knocking" must amaze them, and arouse in them suspicion. The times are very different now from the times of our ancestors. We may well be lenient with peculiarities of our Puritan forbears. Their dealings with Mrs. Hutchinson and Roger Williams, with the Quakers and the Indians, and with any new kind of theologian were not above criticism. They were often hard and fiercely harsh;—but please remember their antecedents and their environment, their continual fear, their ambition and their hopes. Their faults may easily be extenuated and forgiven. But for us to extenuate kindred faults in *ourselves*, to indulge harsh or insinuating intolerance ourselves, or to condone without indignant protest, intolerance in others—bitter, scurrilous or slanderous, is utterly indefensible and shameful.

Theodore Roosevelt is an unusually striking example of this Greatness of the Fourth Order,—which cordially appreciates the sincerity, courage, and honesty of other men; and I am glad to have in him a concrete example, for the living concrete example is far more convincing than the abstract theory. There never lived a man who cared less for harsh criticism or ludicrous caricature than he; nor one who has had to bear more of both; nor one who felt less keenly the imputation of self-conceit or self-seeking; nor one who indulged less resentment when denied results which he believed were all important. He can laugh heartily over jokes at his own expense; and he can preserve a serene good humour when men are berating him savagely,—not more through consciousness of his own integrity than in recognition of the other man's right to speak his mind plainly. He honors a fair, if fierce fighter; he contends for, and he exemplifies the spirit of the "square deal."

Mr. Governor, it *takes* real greatness of soul to appreciate greatness in others, even though it be simply the common-place greatness of honesty, fearlessness and truth. These homely



virtues are transcendently great, because of their enduring value to any man in his upbuilding of character, as well as to the community, and the country where he lives. I am profoundly convinced that I ought to believe in the honor and worth of the "average man," as hinted by the associate at my left in his speech this evening. Since I am a man, no other man can be alien or indifferent to me. Yes, I *am* an optimist, even though I did serve during one legislative session, several years ago, as Chaplain of the New York State Senate: and I am still an optimist, although I dared not accept their invitation to be Senate Chaplain during the succeeding session.

Mr. Governor, and Associates of the Order of Founders and Patriots, *because we are* Founders and Patriots, we are bound to be the apostles of optimism, the highest, broadest and kindest optimism, as concerns our fellow-men, our institutions and our country. We know we can not be greatly loyal to our Country unless we believe in and speak well of our Country's citizens and her institutions. The divine flame of patriotism, the passionate love of country, must inspire in us all the study and the culture of this most real greatness.

"What words divine of lover or of poet  
Could tell our love, and make thee know it,  
Among the Nations bright beyond compare?  
What were our lives without thee?  
What all our lives to save thee?  
We reckon not what we gave thee;  
We will not dare to doubt thee;  
But ask whatever else, and we will dare!"

THE TOASTMASTER: Associates and Guests, I will detain you but a very few minutes longer. I regret that the last speaker on our list, the Hon. Walter M. Chandler, is not present to respond to the toast, "The Great Republic," but I see in the audience a friend of mine, whom I will ask to make a few remarks. I refer to the Rev. J. Henry Smythe, of Philadelphia, a silver-tongued orator, who has been doing duty in that line for the last thirty or forty years.

REV. J. HENRY SMYTHE (of Philadelphia): I once heard that Jenny Lind sang a song in Sing Sing Prison, that most touching



of American songs: "Home—Home—Home;—Sweet—Sweet—Home"; and it had such an effect upon the prisoners that forty of them broke out that night and started for home.

If you have got homes, Associates and Friends, for pity's sake, go to them. (Laughter and applause.)

THE TOASTMASTER: Associates, our exercises are over. We thank you very much for your kind attention and we hope you will be here next year.





## Publications of the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America

1. "The Settlement of New York," by George Rogers Howell, March 18, 1897.
2. "The Battle of Lexington," by Hon. John Winslow, May 13, 1897.
3. "George Clinton," by Col. R. E. Prime, December 15, 1902.
4. "Washington, Lincoln and Grant," by Gen. James Grant Wilson, April 6, 1903.
5. "Early New York," by Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt, January 15 1904.
6. "Thomas Hooker, the First American Democrat," by Walter Seth Logan, February 19, 1904.
7. "Early Long Island," by Hon. Wm. Winton Goodrich, March 16, 1904.
8. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1904.
9. "The Philippines and The Filipinos," by Maj. Gen. Frederick D. Grant, December 10, 1904.
10. "Some Social Theories of the Revolution," by Theodore Gilman, January 31, 1905.
11. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1905.
12. "The Story of the Pequot War," by Thos. Egleston, LL.D., Ph. D., December 15, 1905.
13. "Distinctive Traits of a Dutchman," by Col. John W. Vrooman, February 23, 1906.
14. "An Incident of the Alabama Claims Arbitration," by Col. Ralph E. Prime, March 23, 1906.
15. "Banquet Addresses and Memoir of Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt," May 14, 1906.
16. "Constitution, By-Laws and Regulations of the Order, and List of Members of the General Court, with By-Laws, and List of Members of the New York Society," November 1, 1906.
17. "Some Municipal Problems that Vexed the Founders," by Rev. Wm. Reed Eastman, December 14, 1906.
18. "A Vanished Race of Aboriginal Founders," by Brig. Gen'l Henry Stuart Turrill, U. S. A., February 14, 1907.
19. "List of Officers and Members of the New York Society," November 15, 1907.
20. "The Hudson Valley in the Revolution" by Francis Whiting Halsey, December 13, 1907.
21. "American Territory in Turkey: or Admiral Farragut's Visit to Constantinople and the Extra-territoriality of Robert College," by Ralph E. Prime, LL.D., D. C. L., February 14, 1908.
22. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1908.
23. "Some Things the Colony of North Carolina Did and Did First in the Founding of English-Speaking America," by William Edward Fitch, M. D., December 11, 1908.
24. "Colonial Legends and Folk Lore," by Hon. John C. Coleman, January 20, 1910.
25. "The Origin, Rise and Downfall of the State of Franklin, Under Her First and Only Governor—John Sevier," by William Edward Fitch, M. D., March 11, 1910.
26. "Proceedings on the Dedication of the Tablet Erected by the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America, on the Site of Fort Amsterdam at the United States Custom House, New York City," September 29, 1909.
27. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1910.





Commodore Isaac Hull  
and  
The Frigate Constitution

---



"Steadfast for God and Country."

---

An Address by  
GEN. JAS. GRANT WILSON, D. C. L.  
delivered before  
The New York Society  
of the  
Order of the Founders and Patriots of America  
at the  
Hotel Manhattan, New York  
October 28th, 1910



# Officers of the New York Society Order of the Founders and Patriots of America

---

## *Governor*

GEORGE CLINTON BATCHELLER, LL. D.,  
143 Fifth Avenue, New York.

## *Deputy Governor*

THEODORE GILMAN,  
55 William Street, New York.

## *Chaplain*

REV. EDWARD PAYSON JOHNSON, D. D.,  
New Brunswick, N. J.

## *Secretary*

WILLIAM EDWARD FITCH, M. D.,  
320 Manhattan Avenue, New York.

## *Treasurer*

MATTHEW HINMAN,  
416 Broadway, New York.

## *State Attorney*

GOODWIN BROWN,  
135 Broadway, New York.

## *Registrar*

JOHN C. COLEMAN,  
100 Broadway, New York.

## *Genealogist*

LOUIS ANNIN AMES,  
99 Fulton Street, New York.

## *Historian*

REAR ADMIRAL EBENEZER S. PRIME, U. S. N.,  
Huntington, Long Island.

## *Councilors*

1908-1911

COL. RALPH EARL PRIME, Yonkers, N. Y.  
EDGAR ABEL TURRELL, New York.  
CHARLES W. B. WILKINSON, New York.

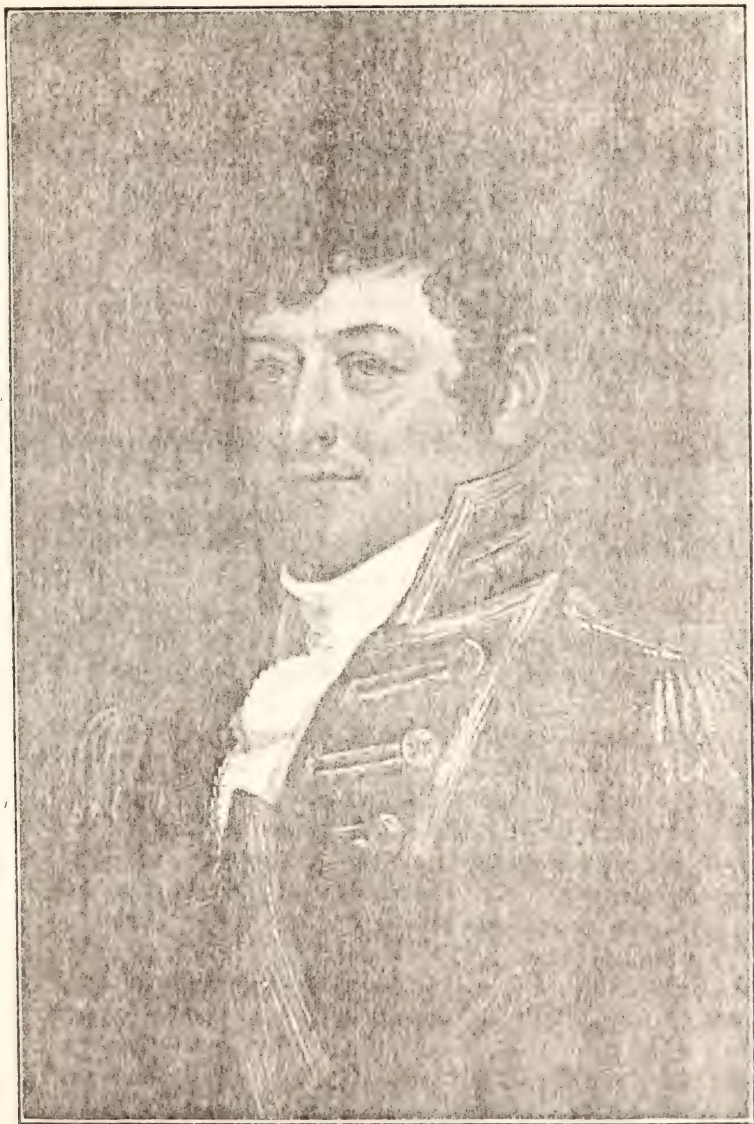
1909-1912

MAJOR GENERAL FREDERICK D. GRANT, U. S. A.  
THOMAS REDFIELD PROCTOR.  
RICHARD HUBBARD ROBERTS.

1910-1913

GEN. STEWART L. WOODFORD.  
THEODORE FITCH.  
COL. GEORGE E. DEWEY.





COM. ISAAC HULL, U. S. N.

From the painting by Gilbert Stuart (1816)





# COMMODORE ISAAC HULL

AND

## THE FRIGATE CONSTITUTION

---

AN ADDRESS DELIVERED BEFORE THE NEW YORK  
SOCIETY OF THE ORDER OF THE FOUNDERS  
AND PATRIOTS OF AMERICA

At the Hotel Manhattan, New York, October 28, 1910

BY GEN. JAS. GRANT WILSON, D. C. L.

---

*Governor Batcheller, Ladies and Gentlemen :*

In the course of one of my last conversations with Admiral Farragut, he said, while speaking of the naval heroes of the war of 1812, "Isaac Hull was as able a seaman as ever sailed a ship. If I have done the country any service afloat, it is in no small degree owing to the ambition and enthusiasm he created in me when I was a youngster by his fair fight with, and capture of, an English frigate. I always," added the admiral, "envied Hull that piece of good luck." The Commander, that the famous Farragut could, after his great achievements at New Orleans and Mobile, find it in his heart to envy, possessed many of the traits that characterized our illustrious American Admiral. He was not, at least in early life, unlike him in person, he possessed the same pleasing and unaffected manners, the same modesty and magnanimity, the same daring and dauntless courage, and the same spotless reputation in all the various relations of life.

The name of Hull is of English origin. Including the late Commodore Joseph B. Hull, the family can be traced through eight generations, and, as has been said of that of Washington, its history gives proof "of the lineal and enduring worth of race." Five persons of the name, who are believed to have been brothers, were living in New England within a score of years of that stormy day in December, when the Mayflower landed her precious cargo of pilgrims on Plymouth Rock. Previous to 1638 they had been admitted freemen by the General Court of Massachusetts. From these sturdy sons of John Hull of London are



descended all, or nearly all, of the name now living in this country. One of these brothers was captain of an artillery company; another was, as early as 1634, Representative to the General Court; from a third the town of Hull received its name; while the son of another, who, when Massachusetts Bay assumed the prerogative of coining money, was her treasurer and master of the mint, amassing, for that primitive period, a large fortune in the office before Charles II. put a stop to that infringement of his royalties, married Judith Quincy, daughter of Edmund Quincy, the first of the honored name to appear in the New World. There is an association with the name of this fair lady, which I fear may not commend itself to the blessings of some of this audience who are accustomed to pass between Boston and New York by way of Long Island Sound; for John Hull owned real estate in the Narragansett country, and in conferring



*Isaac Hull*

Reproduced by courtesy of J. Appleton & Company

Christian names to those savage places, he gave that of his wife to a promontory of ill-repute, which to this day is known as Point Judith—a terror to travellers who, like the classic Sir Joseph Porter, K. C. B.—

“When the breezes blow--generally go below.”

The daughter of John and Judith Hull was, in the year 1676, married to Samuel Sewall, afterwards Chief Justice, whose quaint and curious diary has been published, and is almost as interesting as that of another Samuel, who was his contemporary



—the immortal Pepys, prince of diarists. The mint-master gave his daughter, as dowry, her weight in silver. The tradition is that he seated the fair Hannah on a scale, and, in the presence of the wedding guests, honestly and fairly balanced her with freshly coined pine-tree shillings. From this marriage has sprung the eminent family of Sewall, which has given one chief justice to Canada, and three to Massachusetts.

The remaining one of the five Hulls, named Richard, in the year 1639, removed from Massachusetts and settled at New Haven. His son, known as Dr. John Hull, established himself in the neighboring town of Derby, and was for many years its representative in the General Assembly. Afterwards he went to Wallingford, where he owned a mile square of land, probably granted to him for services rendered as surgeon in King Philip's war. From him are descended General William Hull, and the hero who, with the frigate "Constitution," in which he broke the charm of British invincibility on the sea; "whose slaughter-breathing brass grew hot, and spoke her name among the nations of the earth," is the subject of this address.

Isaac, the eldest of seven sons of Joseph and Sarah Hull, was born at Derby, March 9, 1775, early enough to hear the echoes of the guns fired at Lexington and Concord. His father entered the army as Lieutenant of Artillery, and was made prisoner at the capture of Fort Washington. After his exchange in 1778 he was placed in command of a flotilla on Long Island Sound, and did some good sea service for his country. He was a second time captured by the enemy, and was one of the unhappy patriots who suffered martyrdom in a Jersey prison-ship. Isaac as a child was on one occasion out in a boat, when a squall came up suddenly, accompanied by thunder, lightning, and heavy rain. While the other children cried with fright, our little hero laughed and clapped his hands, an incident reminding us of Gray's lines in the "Progress of Poesy:"

" — the dauntless child  
Stretched forth his little arms, and smiled."

"Fear, grandmother?" said the hero of Trafalgar, when seven summers old, "fear, grandmother? I never saw fear!" Isaac Hull, at the same age, might have indulged in similar childish prattle. He certainly *lived* the words of Lord Nelson. His father being dead, he was at an early age adopted by his uncle,



General Hull, who wished to educate him with a view to his entering Yale College, where he himself was graduated, in 1772, but the boy's unconquerable passion for the sea made him an unwilling and a somewhat unsuccessful student; and so we find him at fourteen, following the natural bent of his genius and choosing the sea for his field of action. He entered the merchant service, beginning, in accordance with the custom of that time, as a cabin-boy, on a ship belonging to one of General Hull's friends. The vessel was afterwards wrecked, and the captain was saved by the brave young sailor of sixteen. Before he was twenty-one years of age, he was commander of a ship that sailed to the West Indies. He was in this position at the first establishment of the American Navy, and so great was the reputation which he had already acquired as a skilful seaman, that he entered the service as fourth lieutenant, his commission being dated March 9, 1798, his twenty-third birthday.

Hull saw his first service in our infant navy, under Commodore Samuel Nicholson, commanding the "Constitution." Two years later, while still serving on board the "Constitution," then the flagship of Commodore Silas Talbot, the latter accepted a challenge from the captain of an English frigate to engage in a day's trial of speed. Hull, already advanced to the grade of first lieutenant, sailed "Old Ironsides," and the admirable manner in which he did it was long the subject of eulogy. All hands were kept on deck during the entire day, and, just as the sun disappeared, the "Constitution" fired her evening gun, the signal that the sailing match was ended. In the race the English frigate was beaten several miles, and her boastful captain lost his cask of wine. The manner in which "Old Ironsides" was handled was entirely due to Hull, whose skill in sailing a ship under canvas was ever remarkable. In this particular he was perhaps the most efficient officer of the American Navy, as he certainly had no superior for coolness in the hour of danger.

During the same cruise, Hull manned from the crew of the "Constitution" a small vessel called the "Sally;" ran into Port Platte, Hayti, at noonday; boarded and captured a French letter-of-marque known as the "Sandwich," while the marines landed and spiked the guns of the battery before the commanding officer could prepare for defence. Taken altogether, it was one of the best executed enterprises of its character in our naval annals.





On the 18th May, 1804, Lieutenant Hull was promoted to the rank of Master-Commanding, and assigned to the brig "Argus," which vessel participated in several gallant actions at Tripoli and elsewhere, in the war against the Barbary States, the American squadron being commanded by Commodore Edward Preble. Two years later, Hull was made a full captain, and before hostilities began between the United States and England, he was in command of the "Constitution" in which he was ordered to Europe to carry specie for the payment of the interest on the debt due to Holland. Having dispatched his business with that government, Hull proceeded to Portsmouth where he remained several days that he might communicate with the American *chargé-d'affaires*, then accredited to the court of St. James.

There having been some difficulty while in port about deserters, and two English ships having anchored alongside, the "Consti-



Reproduced by courtesy of D. Appleton & Company

tution" changed her position for another, to which she was followed by one of the frigates. Captain Hull, not intending to be caught unprepared like Commodore Barron in the "Chesapeake," ordered the ship cleared for action. The lanterns were lighted fore and aft, and the men went to quarters by beat of drum. Cooper remarks, "It is not easy to portray the enthusiasm that existed in the noble ship, every officer and man on board believing that the affair of the "Chesapeake" was to be repeated, so far, at least, as the assault was concerned. The manner in which the crew took hold of the gun-tackles has been described as if they were about to jerk the guns through the ship's sides. An officer who was passing through the batteries observed to the men, that if there was an occasion to fight, it would be in their quarrel, and that he expected good service



from them. "Let the quarter-deck look out for the colors," was the answer, "and we will look out for the guns." In short, it was not possible for a ship's company to be in better humor to defend the honor of the flag, when the drum beat the retreat, and the boatswain piped the people to the capstan-bars." The day succeeding the night on which the ship sailed for France several men-of-war were seen in chase. The "Constitution" outsailed all the ships save one. After leading her a long distance ahead of the others, Captain Hull hove to, beat to quarters, and waited to learn the Englishman's business, remarking to a lieutenant: "If that fellow wants to fight, we won't disappoint him." The frigate came close to the "Constitution," but no hostilities were offered, and "Old Ironsides" proceeded on her way to Cherbourg. Isaac Hull's hour of glory and fame had not yet come.

Five days after, tardy justice was rendered to American honor by the return of two seamen taken by the "Leopard" from the deck of the always unfortunate frigate "Chesapeake" in 1807, war with Great Britain was declared. I should perhaps pause and say a word in reference to the various outrages on our flag which led to the war, and to the timid policy as regards our Navy, pursued by Mr. Madison's administration, but as the chorus to Henry the Fifth very sensibly remarks, "Time, numbers and due course of things cannot be here presented." At the commencement of hostilities, ninety-eight years ago, we had, in addition to seven frigates, only some fifteen sloops of war and smaller vessels lying in the naval dock yards, with which to cope with England's 1060 sail, eight hundred of which, according to Steel's list of the Royal Navy for 1811-12 were in commission and ranging from cutters carrying four guns and up to the line-of-battle ships carrying 120. Against such overwhelming odds did the conflict begin, and so little confidence had the administration in the ability of our vessels to meet the British ships, that, but for the spirited protest of Stewart and Bainbridge, they would have been kept in port to prevent their capture! The English press ridiculed the American Navy as consisting of a few *fir-built* frigates flying at their mast-heads a piece of striped bunting which Britannia would soon sweep from the seas; but a much better judge of such matters—the renowned Nelson—after critically examining the seamanship of Commodore Dale's



squadron, said that there was in the handling of those trans-Atlantic ships a nucleus of trouble for the Navy of Great Britain. The various apologies for England's naval defeats which soon followed the declaration of war, June 18, 1812, what were they but verifications of her great admiral's predictions? When, in 1803, Louisiana was sold to the United States by Napoleon, he prophetically said, in the bitterness of his thwarted ambition, "I have given to England a maritime rival that will sooner or later humble her pride."

On her return the *Constitution* went into the Chesapeake, was cleaned and newly coppered, and, shipping a new crew, she proceeded to sea under orders to join Commodore Rodgers' squadron at New York. "You are not," continues his orders, "voluntarily to encounter a force superior to your own." I should hesitate to believe that an American secretary of the navy could issue such cowardly instructions, did I not possess the original order. July 19th, when five days out and under easy canvass, Hull came in sight of four sail and soon after a fifth, which proved to be an English fleet under Commodore Broke, cruising off Sandy Hook. The enemy immediately gave chase, and the sea being smooth with light and baffling winds, and being on soundings Capt. Hull resorted to the rare expedient of kedging, by means of a series of long cables and the use of his boats. For a time this marvellous movement of the American frigate through the water was undiscovered by the English, who were not slow to imitate the experiment. At every "cat's paw" the *Constitution* struggled for the weather gage, so as to keep her pursuers astern and to the leeward. Sails were wet down fore and aft, braces kept in hand to whip the boats up without delay, some of her water pumped out to lighten her, and, in short, everything that the ablest seamanship could devise was done to save the American frigate.

For three days and three nights the chase was continued, the crew of the *Constitution* exhibiting extraordinary endurance and spirit, till, finally, a heavy squall came up, and as it approached our ship, her sails were clewed up and clewed down almost instantaneously, and when the weight of the wind was received, she sheeted home, set all sail, and was flying before the breeze. Within half an hour of the time when the English were lost to sight, the *Constitution* was in chase of a vessel which,





however, proved to be an American. The English themselves expressed admiration for the manner in which Hull escaped from their squadron. Their astonishment was as great as when, some two score years later, the yacht America ran away from the best yachts of the British Islands in the memorable contest for the queen's cup, which no Englishman has since succeeded in carrying back to the "fast-anchored isle." The escape of the Constitution was certainly as unexpected by them as was the result of the yacht race of 1852, for we learn from the testimony of the captain of a merchant vessel, at the time of the chase a prisoner on board the Shannon, that a prize crew were actually selected by Commodore Broke to conduct her in triumph to Halifax!

The praises bestowed on Capt. Hull for saving his ship induced him, soon after her arrival at Boston, to publish a modest and magnanimous card in which he gave a large portion of the credit to the officers and crew. His official letter addressed to the secretary of the navy was equally magnanimous, and has all the interest of a romance.

Daily expecting orders from Washington which never came, and impatient to measure strength with the enemy, particularly with the "Guerriere," whose captain had indulged in contemptuous comments on the American navy, Hull decided to go on a cruise. It is now known that he was to have been superseded by Bainbridge who ranked him, and that his instructions closed with these words: "*Remain in Boston until further orders.*" Luckily our hero did not receive this letter until he returned from his victorious cruise. Hull put to sea on the second of August, and, said Admiral Charles H. Bell, had the "Constitution" been captured, he would have been hanged or shot for sailing without orders! After cruising to the north and east for a fortnight without making any important captures, the "Constitution" came in sight of a strange sail on Wednesday afternoon, August 19th, and immediately gave chase. Before five o'clock the stranger was known to be a British frigate, and Hull with his colors flying, his ship cleared for action, and his crew at the guns, all double shotted, that is, with one round shot and a canister of grape, bore down on the enemy with the determination of making the affair short, sharp, and decisive. Hull believed and acted on Nelson's maxim that "The captain cannot be far wrong that lays his ship alongside the enemy." When the frig-



ates were within long gunshot, the Englishman commenced firing, first the guns of one side, he would then wear ship and discharge those of the other. This compelled the "Constitution," in nautical language, to "yaw," or change her course, to prevent being raked. She fired but three bow guns in approaching, while the enemy kept up a steady discharge of broadsides.

It was now six o'clock, the ships were within a few hundred yards of each other, several of the "Constitution's" crew had been killed and wounded, and all on board were so impatient to open on the enemy, that only their perfect discipline could restrain them. Lieutenant Morris three times asked permission to open fire, but each time was told "Not yet, sir." At length Hull sent forth the mandate, and when within fifty yards of the "Guerriere," the "Constitution" fired her first broadside, following in quick succession with others, equally well-directed and destructive to the enemy, whose mizzen-mast soon fell over the starboard quarter, Hull coolly remarking, "We've made a brig of that British craft." In thirty minutes after the "Constitution" fired her broadside, the Englishman's fore and main-mast went by the board, and the flag that had been flying on the stump of the mizzen-mast soon after came down. The prize proved to be the very ship that Hull was looking for, whose commander had three days previously made the following entry on the register of an American vessel bound for New York: "Commodore Dacres, Commander of his Britannic Majesty's frigate 'Guerriere,' of 44 guns, presents his compliments to Commodore Rodgers, of the United States frigate, 'President,' and will be happy to meet him, or any other frigate of equal force to the 'President,' off Sandy Hook, for the purpose of having a few minutes *tête-à-tête*."

Admiral Farragut told your speaker an amusing incident of this sea-fight. He said "Hull was short like myself, and what a Yankee would call chunky. When approaching the enemy he stood on an ammunition box which chanced to be on the quarter-deck, that he might have a better view. The shot came thick and fast, several of his men had been badly wounded, and a ball passed within a few inches of his head, when he jumped down, and leaning over in the excitement of the moment and in emphasizing his order to give the Englishman a broadside, he burst his very tight knee-breeches in the rear, being, as I have said, a fat little fellow. It was, however, no time for changing breeches



as Lincoln told us in his story about swapping horses, and not even the fierceness of the action prevented an occasional smile among his crew as they saw Hull moving about in his damaged attire." The "Guerriere" was too badly injured to be taken into port, so, after the prisoners and their effects were removed, she was on the following day set on fire and blown up.

Hull and Dacres had met before the war and had some conversation in regard to the merits of their respective navies. Professional pride operating on both, led them from generalities to particulars, and at last to speak of what would happen if, in the event of war, their ships, the "Constitution" and "Guerriere," should come into collision. Hull, who was lively and good humored, laughingly said to the English captain: "Take care of that ship of yours, if ever I catch her in the "Constitution." Dacres laughed in return, and offered a handsome wager that, if ever they did meet as antagonists, his friend would find out his mistake. Hull refused to bet money, but said he would wager on the issue—a hat. As Dacres, who was wounded in the action I have described, came up the side of the "Constitution," the kind-hearted Hull said, as if addressing a shipmate: "Dacres, give me you hand, I know you are hurt," and when the captain offered his sword, Hull added: "No, no, I will not take a sword from one who knows so well how to use it—but—I'll trouble you for *that hat!*"

Apropos of this anecdote, Nicholson Kane told me the following incident which may very appropriately be introduced here: "When I was in the Navy," said my friend, "I met an English acquaintance on the staff of the Admiral in command of the British fleet stationed at Bermuda, who invited me to dine aboard the flagship. Among the score or more guests at the Admiral's table, was a young lieutenant who had been drinking too freely, and who asked the Admiral's permission to sing a song. This being given, he sang the song of the Shannon's victory over the Chesapeake, all joining in the chorus, myself included. When he took his seat, I rose and inquired of the Admiral if I might favor them with a song? Permission being graciously given, the Britishers heard how Hull in the Constitution captured the Guerriere, and of course were compelled to join in the chorus! When the party adjourned, the Admiral apologized to me for the lieutenant's conduct, frankly adding, "Well, Mr. Kane, you caught us fairly with your vigorous American song."





Our hero afterwards asked Dacres if there was anything in particular on board the *Guerriere* which he wished to preserve. On his expressing a desire to save a large Bible, the gift of his mother, Hull sent an officer for it. Many years later our hero met Dacres, then an admiral, and in command of a squadron anchored off Gibraltar. He expressed the greatest pleasure at meeting the Commodore, and was constant in his courtesies and attentions. At a dinner given on board his flag-ship, he showed Mrs. Hull the treasured Bible which her husband had saved. Dacres was deeply touched by Hull's humane and generous treatment of himself and his crew, and in his official report alluded to it in these words: "I feel it my duty to state that the conduct of Captain Hull and his officers to our men has been that of a brave enemy, the greatest care being taken to prevent our men losing the smallest trifle, and the greatest attention being paid to the wounded."

In the Italian reminiscences of James E. Freeman, an American artist, who was for many years a resident of Rome, appears the following passage: "In the winter of 1837," says the painter, "there were but a small number of Americans here; among them was Commodore Hull, and at the same time, by a curious combination, also his old antagonist, Dacres, the commander of the *Guerriere*. There were seen frequently walking arm-in-arm about the Eternal city, the best of friends and companions, and we used to call them light and shadow, Commodore Hull being preposterously bulky, and his companion notably thin and bony. The victorious captain of the "*Constitution*" sat to Crawford for his bust, one of the earliest efforts of his professional career. One day, after he had finished his sitting with the old hero, I met the embryo sculptor at the Lepre, where we usually went for our dinners. "Well, my boy," I said, "how did you get on to-day with your sitter?" "He was in a very jocose humor, and remarkably amusing," Crawford replied. "As I was working with my modeling-tool about his eyes, he cried out as if he was hurt, 'I say, Signor Tommaso, don't poke that stick into my peepers in that way, I can't stand it! Softly, my lad, softly!'"

The *Guerriere* was one of the finest frigates in the British navy; a fact which is certified to in a letter to Lord Keith from Captain Thomas Lavie, of the frigate *Blanche*—in which ship,





on July 19, 1806, off the Faroe Islands, he captured her. She was of the largest class of frigates, mounting fifty guns with a complement of 317 men. After her capture the organs of British opinion vainly endeavored to detract from the victory by disparaging the very ship which they had previously praised as able to drive "the insolent striped bunting from the seas," while the "Constitution," then designated as "a bundle of pine boards," was called "one of the staunchest vessels" afloat. The American ship, which was so slightly injured in her hull that she then won the designation of "Ironsides," lost seven killed and seven wounded, while the enemy had seventy-nine killed and wounded. No commissioned officer of either frigate lives to tell the story of the famous encounter, and, so far as known, Stephen W. West of Staten Island, who died in 1876, at the age of eighty-two, was the last survivor of the conflict.\*

As the "Constitution" was encumbered with prisoners, it was deemed necessary by her commander to return to port. On her arrival at Boston the ship and all on board were welcomed with the wildest enthusiasm, and the captain was carried in triumph to his hotel, amidst the acclamations of thousands. A grand banquet was given in Faneuil Hall to Hull and his officers, at which the venerable John Adams, who signed Hull's first commission in 1798, was present. Many of the State Legislatures voted him a sword with their thanks; the freedom of several cities, including New York, were presented each in a gold box. New York ordered a full-length portrait by John Wesley Jarvis, the best American artist at that time, Stuart only excepted. The well preserved picture may be seen in the City Hall. Congress gave him a gold medal, and voted the sum of fifty thousand dollars to be distributed as prize money among the officers and crew of the "Constitution," whose example "was highly honorable to the American character and instructive to our rising navy."

The whole country was electrified by the news that an English frigate, in a fight with an American, had been beaten and captured; that the flag, which had destroyed the navies of

---

\*Commander John Marston, of Massachusetts, who entered the United States Navy in 1813, in sending me some particulars of the famous engagement, remarked: "I have always looked on the fight between the "Constitution" and "Guerriere" as the most important event in the history of our navy, glorious as some other events have been to us."



France, Holland and Spain, had fallen before the Stars and Stripes. At this day it is difficult to describe the effect on both sides of the Atlantic of Hull's victory. "I can only compare our rejoicings to those caused by the glorious news from Gettysburg and from Grant at Vicksburg," remarked a venerable man who distinctly recalled both periods, and who passed away at the great age of 92.\* In Great Britain the event created the most profound sensation, and was properly viewed as a damaging blow to Britain's boasted supremacy of the seas. "How is it," asked a British admiral of one of our captains, "that you have captured so many of our ships, half your men being English?" "Because," was the prompt reply, "the other half are Americans."

Isaac Hull having within a single month performed two handsome exploits, gave up the command of the "Constitution" with a magnanimous feeling that was highly creditable to him. There were unfortunately fewer frigates than captains in our navy, and he wished to give other commanders an equal chance to win renown. Bainbridge, it will be remembered, had been ordered to "Old Ironsides" before she sailed on her victorious cruise, and he accordingly relieved Hull from command. It is not to be supposed, however, that our hero would not have been permitted to retain the always lucky ship had he asked for her.

It is perhaps idle at this day to indulge in speculations as to what Isaac Hull might have achieved had he been kept in command of the "Constitution," or some other frigate. His perfect acquaintance with his professional duties, the admiration and confidence his crew always displayed, and his rule of life which the Hebrew King summed up his experience, "Whatever thy hand findeth to do, do it with all thy might," all combined to form a commander to be dreaded by an enemy. Another characteristic of the commodore was his antipathy to idleness. In one of his letters in my possession, written from Washington in 1834, to his nephew Joseph, he says, "You do not tell me what you are about. I hope you find constant employment, for be assured that *idleness will soon bring any man to ruin.*"

Elisha Hart, son of the old minister of Saybrook, Conn., and

---

\* Judge Elbert Herring, of New York, who died February, 1876. The Hon. Charles P. Clinch, also of this city, corroborated his statement.



brother of Gen. William Hart, a soldier of the Revolution, had seven daughters, all celebrated beauties. One of these seven captivated our hero some years before the war, but haughtily refused his heart and hand when offered. Time passed on, the modest young lieutenant was promoted to the rank of captain, and had won enduring fame by his great victory, when the fair lady said to a friend, "What a delightful thing it must be to be the wife of a hero!" This remark, as she doubtless intended, was repeated to Hull, who had remained faithful to his first love. Like Othello, he acted on the hint, and in 1813 the beautiful Ann M. Hart became Mrs. Isaac Hull. I have seen her portrait by Stuart. It would be difficult to meet with a lovelier face or figure. She survived her gallant husband for more than thirty years, and now sleeps by his side. The Hart mansion, one of the pleasantest old houses in Saybrook, charmingly draped by the foliage of gigantic elms, was for several years a favorite residence of the commodore and his beautiful wife.

Time will not permit me to do more than very briefly outline Hull's subsequent career, in which he faithfully served his country, as captain and commodore, afloat and ashore thirty-seven years. He was for a long period a member of the Naval Board; was in command of the Boston and Washington Navy Yards, and commanded squadrons in the Pacific and in the Mediterranean. His last sea service was in the ship of the line Ohio, during the years 1839, 1840, and 1841. Soon after his return from the command of the European squadron, the commodore purchased a commodious residence on Spruce St., Philadelphia. There he collected together all his scattered household articles and trophies—there he hospitably entertained old friends and new, and sometimes, but very rarely, for it was not his habit to allude to his own deeds, he, like Goldsmith's soldier,

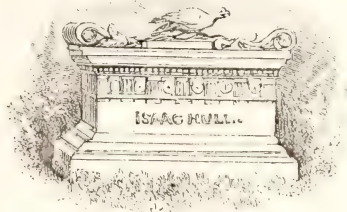
"Shoulder'd his crutch, and showed how fields were won."

During the winter of 1842 he was seized with the sickness which terminated his honorable career. He retained the full use of his mental faculties to the end, which came on Monday, the 13th day of February, 1843, his last words being, "I strike my flag." Hull had set his house in order, and had purchased the lot in Laurel Hill Cemetery, where his remains now rest under a beautiful altar tomb of Italian marble, a copy of one to be seen in Rome, chastely ornamented and surrounded by an American Eagle





in the attitude of defending the National flag. The inscription is brief and beautiful: "In affectionate devotion to the private virtues of Isaac Hull, his widow has erected this monument." The brave old commodore always wore his uniform, and in that he was buried. All the rough service he had seen and the hardships he had passed did not prevent his reaching a good old age, and he possessed that which should accompany it, not only honor, love, obedience, troops of friends, but the memory of good and gallant deeds performed for that land of which he was always so proud.



Reproduced by courtesy of D. Appleton & Company

I have thus, ladies and gentlemen, attempted to tell the truthful story of the career of an American naval commander, believing with Southey that the best eulogy of a hero is the faithful history of his actions; and the best history must be that which shall relate them most perspicuously. The biographer of Bainbridge collected material for a memoir of Hull, but did not live to complete it, and why the work has never been taken up by another hand, I am at a loss to know. It is a debt which is certainly due to his memory—*Integer vitæ scelerisque purus*—one on whom Nature laid, in the kindly phrase of Wordsworth, "the strong hand of her purity." Unlike the illustrious French soldier of whom Madame de Rémusat says, "The immortality of his name seemed to him much more important than that of his soul," Hull was a devout Christian, who served his country and his God with equal fidelity. If the remark of Dr. Johnson be true that "there has rarely passed a life of which a judicious and authentic narrative would not be useful," it is believed that the story of the career of Isaac Hull could not fail to interest all



classes of his countrymen. There can be no doubt that it is the tendency of the age to go to antiquity for heroic examples, and though antiquity certainly furnishes us with many of the most admirable that we could desire, yet it is just as well to remember with Milton,

“To know  
That which about us lies in daily life,  
Is the prime wisdom,”

and that for the young men of this day and generation, the best models obtainable are those which are not so far removed as to be almost beyond the pale of their sympathy.

May I, ladies and gentlemen, trespass on your time and attention for a few moments more? I wish to say a word concerning the “Constitution,” whose flag

“Has braved a hundred years, the battle and the breeze.”

She was built at Hartly’s shipyard in Boston, and was constructed under a law that was approved by Washington, as President, in 1794. Her frame is of live oak, and her planks were



Reproduced by courtesy of D. Appleton & Company

bent in without steam, as it was thought that process softened and weakened the wood. Her builder had six beautiful daughters for whom he had sent to England for six red cloth cloaks. While the “Constitution” was building, a quantity of this particular kind of cloth was wanted for the ship, and, as none could be procured at the time in Boston, the young ladies gave up their handsome cloaks and they were cut in strips, and used in caulking the “Constitution.” She was launched in October, 1797, and was put in commission the following year, her first commander being Captain Samuel Nicholson, the second in rank



among the six captains appointed by the law of 1794, who had superintended her construction, and who was a lieutenant under Paul Jones in his gallant sea fight with the "Serapis." His equally gallant grandson, Admiral J. W. A. Nicholson, who followed Farragut in the Mobile fight, was in command of the "Manhattan" that fired the shot through a stern port that disabled the Confederate ironclad "Tennessee," wounding Admiral Buchanan, and compelling his surrender to Captain Nicholson. The "Constitution" has always been well commanded. To mention her officers is to enumerate nearly all the heroic names in our early naval annals. Edward Preble, styled "the father of our navy"; John Rodgers, Chauncey, Hull, Decatur, Bainbridge, MacDonough, David Porter, and Charles Stewart, are among the American heroes who won renown in her. She has always been a singularly lucky ship; in all her long service of nearly a century her good fortune was ever remarkable. In the war of 1812 she was twice critically chased; was in these actions always victorious, capturing two frigates and three smaller vessels of war. Her flag has floated on every sea, and in a single cruise of 495 days in the Pacific, the famous old frigate sailed 52,379 miles. Close-hauled to the wind the "Constitution" has easily beaten the best vessels of the British navy, as well as every American ship that she ever sailed with. Her deck has been trod by troops of distinguished personages, including several of the early presidents.

While in the Mediterranean in 1822, Lord Byron was received on board. Commodore Marston remembered the poet's visit, and the admiration he expressed for the noble ship. During Jackson's first term she was condemned, and a mandate was issued to break her up. Fortunately the infamous order was countermanded by competent authority, thanks to the eloquent protest of a gifted young poet, of twenty-one, whose stanzas stirred up the sensibilities of the nation, and saved the dear old craft:

" Ay, tear her tattered ensign down!  
Long has it waved on high,  
And many an eye hath danced to see  
That banner in the sky.  
Beneath it rung the battle-shout,  
And burst the cannon's roar;  
The master of the Ocean air  
Shall sweep the clouds no more !



Old Ironsides.

Age, later her tallied timbers show!  
Long has it braced on high  
And many an eye has found it so  
That banner in the sky,  
Beneath its sunny sails that  
And burst the ocean's door,  
The nation of the ocean  
That sweeps the blue sea o'er.

Her deck once red with blood  
Where knelt the war-widow for  
Whose winds were hurrying to the  
And waves were white below  
No more shall feel the breeze  
No more the conqueror's  
The heroes of the shore shall cheer  
The eagle of the sea!

O better that her shattered hull  
Should sink beneath the wave  
Her ponderous anchors the mighty deep  
Wind there should be her grave!  
Or all to the mast her holy flag,  
Set every thread and sail  
And give her to the god of storms  
The lightning and the gale!  
After us the storm-tost billows

OLD IRONSIDES

From a copy made for General Wilson by Dr. Holmes in 1887





Her deck, once red with heroes' blood—  
Where knelt the vanquished foe,  
When winds were whistling o'er the flood  
And waves were white below—  
No more shall feel the victor's tread,  
Or know the conquered knee;  
The harpies of the shore shall pluck  
The eagle of the sea!

O! better that her shattered hulk  
Should sink beneath the wave;  
Her thunders shook the mighty deep,  
And there should be her grave.  
Nail to the mast her holy flag,  
Set every thread-bare sail,  
And give her to the God of storms,  
The lightning and the gale!"

In the year 1834 the "Constitution" was the cause of quite "a tempest in a teapot." She was being repaired at the Boston navy yard, under the supervision of Commodore Jesse D. Elliott, a great admirer of "Old Hickory," and of course a good democrat, who, by permission of the navy commissioners, ordered a wooden statue of the president to be carved, for the purpose of placing it on the prow of the historic ship. At the same time he proposed, as ornaments for her stern, the busts of Hull, Bainbridge, and Stewart, the commanders of the "Constitution" in her victories over the *Guerriere*, *Java*, *Cyane*, and *Levant*. The whigs of Boston approved of the stern ornaments, but were furious over the so-called sacrilege of "Old Ironsides" being disfigured by what they designated, in handbills which were posted at the street corners of the city, "as the Figure of a Land Lubber." One of these came into my possession, and, as a literary curiosity and illustrative of the political animosities of the time is, I think, worthy of preservation in this address. Here it is *verbatim, et literatim et punctualim*:

FREEMEN AWAKE!  
OR THE CONSTITUTION WILL SINK.

It is a fact that the old "Glory President," has issued his special orders for a Colossean Figure of his Royal self in Roman Costume to be placed as a figure head on OLD IRONSIDES!!! Where is the spirit of '76? Where the brave *Tars* who fought and conquered in the glorious ship, where the *Mecanics*, and where



the Bostonians who have rejoiced in her achievements? Will they see the Figure of a I and Lubber at her bows? No, let the cry be 'all hands on deck' and save the ship by a timely remonstrance, expressing our indignation in a voice of thunder!

Let us assemble in the 'cradle of Liberty,' all hands up for the Constitution—let the figure head (if mortal man be worthy), be that of the brave HULL, the immortal DECATUR, or the valiant PORTER, and not that of a Tyrant. Let us not give up the Ship, but nail the flag of the Union to the mast head, and let her ride the mountain wave triumphant, with none aboard but the Sons of Liberty, all flesh and blood, having the hearts and souls of Freemen.

*North-enders!* Shall this Boston-built ship be thus disgraced without remonstrance? Let this *Wooden God*, this Old Roman, building at the expense of 300 dollars of the *People's money*, be presented to the *office Holders* who glory in such worship, but for God's sake SAVE THE SHIP from this foul disgrace.

A NORTH-ENDER.

A few days after the fiddle-shaped prow was replaced by the figure of Jackson, a bold mariner, named Dewey—a North-ender, I presume—selecting a tempestuous night, scaled the ship's side, sawed off the head of "Old Hickory," and carried it away in a sack! The indignant Elliott replaced it with another, and to secure it against a possible second visit from "a North-ender," he caused a thick copper bolt to be placed perpendicularly in the figure-head. The conqueror of Wellington's brother-in-law, Sir Edward Pakenham, as I have heard, was so much charmed with Elliott's conduct in this affair that he gave him, in 1835, command of the Mediterranean squadron, with the "Constitution" as his flagship, to save his own head, and as a reward for the unquenchable zeal of his heroic admirer. An amusing writer remarks, "Even Jackson, however, could hardly pat him on the back when the party zeal of this same officer led him to fill his gun-deck with jackasses in his homeward voyage, and to set on foot and to subscribe to a testimonial service of plate to be presented, not to the President, but to Commodore Elliott. A court-martial sentenced him to four years' suspension from duty, but it appears that all the jackasses in America must have been convinced of his unselfish wish to improve their breed, and



signed a petition in his behalf; for we find that he was restored to duty before the expiration of his term of sentence."

The figure-head was, however, suffered to rest in peace, and seems to have followed unmolested all the subsequent fortunes of the ancient ship. As it would be, with all deference to the contrary opinion of the eccentric commodore, manifestly inappropriate to associate Andrew Jackson with timbers that speak more audibly than the oak of Dodona, of Hull and Bainbridge, of Chauncey and Stewart, of Decatur and Somers, the figure of the President was removed, and sent to the Naval Academy at Annapolis. The statue is bareheaded and wears a dress suit of the time, over which an ample cloak falls, gathered at the throat with the usual cord. A roll of manuscript is held in the right hand, and the left is buried in the breast of his brass-buttoned and voluminous waistcoat. The likeness which the features bear to the original is not bad, and the hair, at any rate, stands up with archæological accuracy. At the Naval Academy are also to be seen several extremely fine paintings by Corne, representing the various victorious encounters in which the "Constitution" was engaged.

"Old Ironsides" has often been repaired and three times rebuilt, and of the original ship only the keel and floor timbers remain. Her model, however, is unchanged. No vessel that ever floated—no, not even Lord Nelson's "Victory"—was ever so loved by a nation. Ladies have been seen kissing the hem of her sails; men to scrape the barnacles from her bottom to preserve as souvenirs of the old ship, and canes and boxes without number have been made from the original wood of the "Constitution." A Boston merchant had his front door manufactured of the same material, and a beautiful coach was constructed of the oak of the old frigate as a New Year's gift to one of our presidents. I tried to obtain a piece for a cane, and her captain wrote that it would be difficult to get enough for a toothpick! The oft-told story of the boy's jack-knife, which had first new blades, and then a new handle, and was still the same old knife, has been exemplified in the frigate "Constitution."

Her fighting days being over, "Old Ironsides" was for several years used as a school-ship at Annapolis, and when, on the breaking out of the Civil War in 1861, the Naval Academy was removed to Newport, the old conqueror took her place at the





latter station, and young cadets continued to overrun her historic decks. She was repaired and put in good order for the Centennial Exposition of 1876, receiving during that summer, while lying at Philadelphia, many distinguished visitors. Her last foreign service was a peaceful one—carrying American products to and from the Paris Exposition of 1878. After her return the “Constitution” was used as a training-ship for boys for three years, when she was placed out of commission at New York.

She was used for fourteen years as a receiving ship at Portsmouth, N. H., from 1883 to 1897, when the frigate was removed to Boston. By act of Congress, approved in June, 1906, the “Constitution” was renewed to her original condition at a cost of about one hundred thousand dollars, and has since remained at the Boston Navy Yard. Why, Mr. Governor, cannot this Society, through our two United States Senators, request the Washington authorities to send “Old Ironsides” to the Brooklyn Navy Yard for a year, that the citizens of New York and New Jersey may have an opportunity of seeing her?

In the lines of Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes, who saved the ship in 1830:

“ Scarce one tall frigate walks the sea  
Or skirts the safer shores,  
Of all that bore to victory  
Our stout old commodores;  
Hull, Bainbridge, Porter—where are they?  
The answering billows roll  
Still bright in memory’s sunset ray—  
God rest each gallant soul!”





## Publications of the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America

1. "The Settlement of New York," by George Rogers Howell, March 18, 1897.
2. "The Battle of Lexington," by Hon. John Winslow, May 13, 1897.
3. "George Clinton," by Col. R. E. Prime, December 15, 1902.
4. "Washington, Lincoln and Grant," by Gen. James Grant Wilson, April 6, 1903.
5. "Early New York," by Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt, January 15 1904.
6. "Thomas Hooker, the First American Democrat," by Walter Seth Logan, February 19, 1904.
7. "Early Long Island," by Hon. Wm. Winton Goodrich, March 16, 1904.
8. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1904.
9. "The Philippines and The Filipinos," by Maj. Gen. Frederick D. Grant, December 10, 1904.
10. "Some Social Theories of the Revolution," by Theodore Gilman, January 31, 1905.
11. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1905.
12. "The Story of the Pequot War," by Thos. Egleston, LL.D., Ph. D., December 15, 1905.
13. "Distinctive Traits of a Dutchman," by Col. John W. Vrooman, February 23, 1906.
14. "An Incident of the Alabama Claims Arbitration," by Col. Ralph E. Prime, March 23, 1906.
15. "Banquet Addresses and Memoir of Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt," May 14, 1906.
16. "Constitution, By-Laws and Regulations of the Order, and List of Members of the General Court, with By-Laws, and List of Members of the New York Society," November 1, 1906.
17. "Some Municipal Problems that Vexed the Founders," by Rev. Wm. Reed Eastman, December 14, 1906.
18. "A Vanished Race of Aboriginal Founders," by Brig. Gen'l Henry Stuart Turrill, U. S. A., February 14, 1907.
19. "List of Officers and Members of the New York Society," November 15, 1907.
20. "The Hudson Valley in the Revolution" by Francis Whiting Halsey, December 13, 1907.
21. "American Territory in Turkey; or Admiral Farragut's Visit to Constantinople and the Extra-territoriality of Robert College," by Ralph E. Prime, LL.D., D. C. L., February 14, 1908.
22. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1908.
23. "Some Things the Colony of North Carolina Did and Did First in the Founding of English-Speaking America," by William Edward Fitch, M. D., December 11, 1908.
24. "Colonial Legends and Folk Lore," by Hon. John C. Coleman, January 20, 1910.
25. "The Origin, Rise and Downfall of the State of Franklin, Under Her First and Only Governor—John Sevier," by William Edward Fitch, M. D., March 11, 1910.
26. "Proceedings on the Dedication of the Tablet Erected by the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America, on the Site of Fort Amsterdam at the United States Custom House, New York City," September 29, 1909.
27. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1910.
28. "Commodore Isaac Hull and the Frigate Constitution," by Gen. James Grant Wilson, D. C. L., October 28, 1910.



# Some Aspects of the Constitution :

*Charta Maxima lux Libertatis præclara.*



---

An Address by

JOSEPH CULBERTSON CLAYTON, Esquire,

delivered before

The New York Society

of the

Order of the Founders and Patriots of America

at the

Hotel Manhattan, New York,

December 14th, 1910.



Officers of the New York Society Order of the  
Founders and Patriots of America  
1910—1911

---

*Governor*

GEORGE CLINTON BATCHELLER, LL. D.,  
130 Fifth Avenue, New York.

*Deputy Governor*

THEODORE GILMAN,  
55 William Street, New York.

*Chaplain*

REV. EDWARD PAYSON JOHNSON, D. D.,  
New Brunswick, N. J.

*Secretary*

WILLIAM EDWARD FITCH, M. D.,  
355 W. 145th. Street, New York.

*Treasurer*

MATTHEW HINMAN,  
416 Broadway, New York.

*State Attorney*

GOODWIN BROWN,  
135 Broadway, New York.

*Registrar*

JOHN C. COLEMAN,  
100 Broadway, New York.

*Genealogist*

LOUIS ANNIN AMES,  
99 Fulton Street, New York.

*Historian*

REAR ADMIRAL EBENEZER S. PRIME, U. S. N.,  
Huntington, Long Island.

*Councilors*

1908-1911

COL. RALPH EARL PRIME, Yonkers, N. Y.  
EDGAR ABEL TURRELL, New York.  
CHARLES W. B. WILKINSON, New York.

1909-1912

MAJOR GENERAL FREDERICK D. GRANT, U. S. A.  
THOMAS REDFIELD PROCTOR.  
HOWARD KING COOLIDGE.

1910-1913

GEN. STEWART L. WOODFORD.  
THEODORE FITCH.  
COL. GEORGE E. DEWEY.





**“Steadfast for God and Country.”**



# SOME ASPECTS OF THE CONSTITUTION.

An Address by

JOSEPH CULBERTSON CLAYTON, ESQ.,

Of the Bar of the United States Supreme Court,  
and of the State of New York,

BEFORE THE NEW YORK SOCIETY OF THE ORDER  
OF FOUNDERS AND PATRIOTS,

December 14, 1910,

At the Hotel Manhattan, New York City.

*Mr. Governor, Associates of the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America, and Honored Guests:*

The honor of addressing this audience, I shall always esteem as among the highest that I have enjoyed.

A just and honorable pride in descent from the illustrious men and women, our ancestors, who founded this country some three hundred years ago, and through their devoted patriotism brought us to the present state of development, power and honor among nations, is always permissible and admirable. For the proper result of such a pride is that we strive to follow their splendid example. That many of you have so striven, and with success, is known of all men.

The two gallant knights who met where a splendid shield hung at the roadside, saw different *aspects* of the same shield.

One saw the side of gold; the other, the side of silver. Fighting to the death in their dispute, they too late discovered that their points of view had been different. There were different *aspects*.

Tonight I shall speak of some of the "aspects" presented by the Constitution of the United States; for they vary according to one's point of view.

I hope that I may succeed in avoiding dogmatism or partisanship, and I pray that I may use, as far as my too limited capacity will permit, thoughts not unbecoming to the sincerity of the historian, the jurist or the statesman.

"Suggestions" will describe my intent; *suggestions* that may lead you individually to love and to study, reverently, and with an open mind, as I have loved and studied, the Constitution, and its History. Let none take offence if my view differ with his.



Upon the general diffusion of a sound and just appreciation of the "True Constitution" chiefly depends the future welfare of America.

Your attention will be asked to some of the aspects of the Constitution about which equally good and wise men differ.

Let me, then, speak of :

I. Nationality *before and under* the Constitution.

II. Amending the Constitution.

III. The Supreme Court.

Divergent views exist. Be patient with my views; some time I may listen, even more patiently, to yours.

*Montgomery*, in his poem, "The Ocean," used a phrase that most happily describes the peculiar relations between our Nation and our States; they are :

"Distinct as the billows, yet one as the sea." God be thanked for that oneness, and for that distinctness!

First, let it be understood that I firmly believe in the wisdom of our "dual" system of Government : "distinct" in local, yet "one" in general matters; that the powers and rights of the National Government extend as far as necessity may require, so long as they do not infringe upon the just powers and rights of the States; that those powers and rights of the States extend as far as may be needful, so long as they do not infringe upon the powers and rights of the Nation; and that in case of unavoidable conflict between the two governmental forces, the National is paramount.

#### I. NATIONALITY, BEFORE AND UNDER THE CONSTITUTION.

Let us consider *True Nationality*, not *New Nationality*. The adjective "new" was mistakenly used by some of the friends of the Administration in the recent campaign; and their opponents deliberately used it as a term of reproach. I said in the press before the late election : The adjective "new" does not correctly apply, for nationism was the informing spirit which brought about the creation of our nation. It existed in the public heart in a more or less embryonic form as far back as long before the Revolution.

"True Nationalism" rests upon the doctrine that "we, the people," (not "we, the states"), made the Constitution and made it for the general welfare of the people. This doctrine and the opposed doctrine that the Union is, "a mere agency,"





resting upon a dissoluble "compact" or partnership between the several States, were involved in our Civil War, and that mighty wager of battle finally determined the issue in favor of the national doctrine.

As the years move on, the force of evolution operates on law, ethics, religion, physics and all conditions, and also evolves new applications of dormant powers of the nation and its Constitution. The applications may be "new," but the national powers are "old," perhaps sleeping, or latent, but ready to be called forth to meet every new condition, just as the English constitution has always been able to do.

I wish that Mr. Roosevelt and all others who support true nationalism would repudiate the doctrine of their adversaries that the nationalism upon which Independent Thinkers stands is a modern invention, so different from the nationalism of Franklin, Webster, Wilson, Hamilton, Lincoln, Marshall and Chase as to be a harmful innovation.

Very soon after the first English-speaking Colonies were founded, the need of the general strength that exists only in "Union" was the parent of the Spirit of Nationality.

A brief mention of its stages of growth from its conception in the middle of the seventeenth century, to its sturdy manhood in the written Constitution of 1787, and of its increasing power through succeeding years should be of interest to us of the twentieth century.

In 1643, the four colonies then known as Connecticut and New Haven, as Massachusetts Bay and Plymouth, New Hampshire, and Maine formed a union styled "The United Colonies of New England." There were two commissioners from each colony, and six votes were needed for valid action. Their actions were restricted to affairs that were "proper concomitants or consequents of a confederation."

To Indian affairs, war, and peace, chiefly: general expenses to be assessed according to population; local affairs to be reserved to control of each colony. Provisions were also made for extradition of criminals and fugitive slaves. It exercised treaty-powers with the French and Indians; declared and waged war, and decided territorial disputes between colonies. Nominally in force for fifty years, its effective life was only about twenty years.

Then, as now, the "Union" had and exercised inherent powers



for the "general welfare," but each Colony was paramount in its own strictly local affairs.

In 1697 *Penn* proposed an annual Congress of two delegates from each Colony to provide for their common defence and general welfare and to regulate commerce.

In 1754, Franklin's "Albany Plan" for a New England Union was proposed.

In 1765, through the efforts of James Otis, delegates from nine colonies met in New York to consider their general interests and resist improper taxation by forming a Union of Colonies.

In 1774, the first Continental Congress of the delegates of twelve Colonies assembled.

In January, 1776, *Thomas Paine*, with matchless vigor demanded a conference of *all* the Colonies "to form a *continental charter*, and to frame the noblest purest *Constitution* on the face of the earth."

On July 4th, 1776, the Colonial Congress of the whole thirteen Colonies gave to mankind the noblest Declaration of Independence.

This was the act of the *collective* colonies, by their delegates, and was the act of "one people," *as a whole*, and not of thirteen individual colonies; it was the joint act of the entire people as one great body of heirs of English liberty.

That immortal Act converted the crown colonies into Independent States, under Congressional government until the Articles of Confederation were ratified in 1778-1781.

In May, 1781, *Peletiah Webster's* very notable pamphlet appeared with a proposition to call a Continental Convention to form a new system of strong and general government.

The completed scheme was presented in a formal pamphlet February, 1783, which many regard as disclosing the basis of our Constitutional Nationalism. He presented several ideas of the highest value:

1. A general or national government directly acting upon the individual citizen, instead of upon the corporate State.
2. The powers not in the general government to be in the States.
3. The division of the general or central government into three co-ordinate departments — executive, legislative and judicial.
4. The Congress to be in two chambers instead of one.



He also proposed a Department of Commerce under the general government. These four combined "inventions" in the science of government seem to form "a wholly novel theory which may be considered a great discovery in modern political science."

The brief and unsatisfactory experience under the Articles of Confederation of 1778 greatly stimulated the spirit of Nationality, so that in May, 1787, there assembled at Philadelphia a body of men never equaled in political sagacity, who became the "Framers" of the Constitution. Under the wonderful wisdom and skill of Wilson, Madison, Randolph, Hamilton, Pinckney, Sherman, Mason, Franklin, Washington and their compeers, there was created our Constitution, and the great and effective "Government of the United States," under which "Nationality" has attained to its present commanding vigor and stature.

Believing as I do that, in the order of Providence, many minds, in divers places, almost simultaneously, are inspired with the germ of a great thought, or great invention, so that mankind may surely benefit by its adoption, I see little use in apportioning credit for its *earliest* proposition to any one person. The earliest declaration I recall that the national government should *act upon individuals* rather than upon states, was made in the Congress by James Wilson only a few weeks after July 4, 1776, and seven years before Webster's notable pamphlet, February 3, 1783. I do not find myself able fully to agree with the estimate of the originality and value of Mr. Webster's public service as lately urged by Mr. Hannis Taylor.

It was the Spirit of Nationalism that created Franklin's Albany Plan of 1754 to unite the Colonies against the Indian nations and France; that gave the Boston Tea-party, the battles at Alamance, Concord and Lexington that brought about the Continental Congress of 1774, the Declaration of Independence of 1776, and the Articles of Confederation of 1778. It was the resistless power of that spirit which gave the Virginia Plan as the basis of debate, led to the creation of the National Constitution, and organized and put into effective operation the "New Government," and established the American system as it exists to-day: that was the mighty work of the Nationalists—in those days called "Federalists."



Subsequently, through many aristocratic and high-handed blunders, chiefly on the part of a faction, the "Federalists," themselves, paved the way for reaction, and for Jefferson and his ultra-Democratic theories which appealed to the greater mass of the "plain people."

Jefferson began the long line of Democratic rule—and occasional misrule; but not seldom he soared above the narrowness of his theories, ceased to be a mere lawyer, and acted as a "statesman" of prescience and power. Protesting, as "lawyer," against the "constitutionality" of the Louisiana Purchase, Jefferson, as "statesman" rose to the occasion and completed the contract with Napoleon; and thus performed the most important act of Nationalism that has yet been achieved.

The extreme doctrines of State Sovereignty, and of a Compact between the States, etc., long held sway over the majority. But, during and after the War of 1812, there was a revival of the spirit of Nationality; and then it was that the Democrats, especially under the lead of Monroe (who had been selected by Jefferson and Madison) outdid the Federalists in maintaining Nationalism. And so, again, it was under Jackson, Tyler, Polk, Pierce and Johnson.

In no way can the doctrine of Nationalism be more positively shown than by acquiring new territory as property of the Nation. Such was the "practice," notwithstanding the adverse "theory," of every democratic President who saw a chance to acquire territory for the Union. These acquisitions (being all except the *INSULAR POSSESSIONS*), were made by Democratic Presidents in spite of bitter opposition by the Federalists and their successors, the Whigs: Jefferson made the Louisiana Purchase; Monroe, Florida; Texas as a State; Polk, California and New Mexico; Pierce, Gadsden Purchase; Johnson, Alaska. And so, also, they accepted and used the "non-enumerated powers" to make very many "internal improvements."

No matter what his past "theory," when a man assumes the office of President, and faces a national and concrete emergency he acts as a "statesman" should, with small regard to a favorite "theory" or "doctrine."

The malign doctrine, of a handful of men in the North, that the Constitution was "a covenant with hell and a league with death" because it tolerated slavery, brought about a revival





and extension of the most extreme theories of Jefferson and Calhoun, and resulted in narrowing the Southern views upon Nationalism, and in bringing on our Civil War. In truth, Nationality or non-Nationality was the supreme issue of that tremendous conflict. Once, and for all time, that wager of battle determined the debate in favor of Nationality.

Since then the spirit of Nationalism has been expanding so as to meet the new exigencies of a swiftly expanding Nation, which has but just now become a prime factor in world-affairs.

New developments in commerce, arts, manufactures, transportation, territorial enlargement and many other evolutionary changes have demanded the use of national powers not heretofore needed. They have caused many new applications of latent or dormant powers. The idea of using national funds for local state improvements was once regarded with horror. To build the National Road from Baltimore to Pittsburg once seemed a wicked perversion of National Power. Today all men are eager for national help in developing the rivers, harbors, swamps, forests, mines and agriculture of the States, with National money and brains. The "True Nationalism" that now dominates public thought believes that the general welfare of the whole nation requires the development of the individual State. The day of bitter jealousy between the States and the Nation has largely passed away, and each seeks to strengthen the other. "New applications" of "old" national powers must and will come from day to day, as needs arise.

Regulations of corporations, of commerce, and of transportation, have all come to stay. Conservation of all natural resources, regulation of food, of health, of child labor, of accident have all been welcomed. And other "new applications" will come as required by newly evolved conditions, and all can be deduced from a just interpretation of the True Constitution.

The trend of feeling is in the direction of too much National action, rather than too little; too much action by the Nation, too little by the States.

For this reason I welcomed the wise suggestion of William George Jordan that there be a "House of Governors." A voluntary nonconstitutional, annual assembly, to discuss proposed legislation by the States, with a view to greater uniformity, and better drafting of Acts of the Legislature, etc. Such an



assembly should greatly advance the welfare of every state, and consequently, of all the states. It should serve as a counterbalance to the tendency towards the over-exercise of National power.

The States may be assured that if, as individual political bodies, they neglect to do all they may, and can, and ought to do for their own citizens, those citizens will remember that they are *also* citizens of their over-lord, the United States, who will respond to their needed demands, which the State denies to them as its citizens. They will invoke "duality" and exercise "choice" as to full protection for their corporate and other interests! And there must be National law, analogous to the general law of the States, authorizing manufacturing, mining and producing corporations, so that citizens may *elect* between the National and the State protection. *Election* would perfect *jurisdiction*.

When a comparison is drawn between the power, needs and obligations of the United States, as it now exists, and as it was at the formation of the written Constitution in 1787, many facts and conclusions of grave moment present themselves.

Then our population was scarcely equal to the present population of the City of New York; we were weakened by a long and costly war with the greatest Power of the day; were overwhelmed with debt, and friendless. Our own people were almost hopeless, except that a few of unusual prescience hoped that the new Constitution, for the establishment of a *National* Government in the place of the loose and wholly inefficient *Federal* Government under the Articles of Confederation, would soon bring about the benefits due to a wiser and stronger rule. Largely the creature of compromise and expediency, the Constitution has become one of the greatest State Papers ever written. Under its ægis four million citizens have increased beyond one hundred millions, and from the least and poorest of distracted colonies only half-united in purpose, it has become the richest and most powerful of Nations.

No other has a population one-half of ours composed of those who have had such broad experience in self-government, and such a high average of general intelligence and self-poise.

In no country but ours are there two schools of publicists, one holding that only certain, *actually* enumerated powers can



be exercised by the National Government, and that all other powers rest with the States or the people, or are non-existent ; that, in point of fact, the United States is not a Nation, but a mere League, or Federation. The other school claims that the entity known as "The United States" is a Nation, *totus, teres atque rotundus*, in which resides, for every interstate, national and international exigency, an all-sufficient Nationality.

Also, that in addition to the express powers named in the written instrument of 1787, the principles of National Government derived from our English ancestors, the English Common Law, the British Constitution, and the inherent needs of Sovereignty, so far as applicable to our people, were and are essential parts of the written instrument.

Your speaker holds :

That the makers of the written Constitution of 1787 contemplated establishing a strong Nation and National Government fully adequate to every national and international and interstate exigency that might arise ; and that the end they sought was secured.

That sound construction of the Constitution, written and unwritten, excludes the need of formal Amendments :

That the written instrument of 1787 does not exclude (and therefore necessarily and inherently includes) the applicable features of the English Common Law and Statutes, and the British Constitution as they were in the American colonies at and before our Declaration of Independence in 1776 :

That a sound Construction of the Constitution must include and secure the aid of all needful principles of International Law :

That the United States as a political entity is both National and Federal in character—*National* in respect to every power not local to a State ; and Federal in respect to the combined union of the States, which are individual as to local, "police," or municipal matters, and solidly *united and federated* as to all matters affecting the Nation generally.

Chief Justice Marshall, in many luminous decisions declared and defined the powers of the Constitution—as far as the needs and temper of his time would permit.

Were he with us to-day, the *new needs* and the better popular temper in respect to the Nation, and its needful powers would





lead him to perceive and declare other important applications of national powers unneeded and unconsidered in his day.

The time approaches when (whatever it may have said in a narrower past) the Supreme Court will interpret and assert the written and unwritten Constitution as jointly establishing the *modus vivendi* of a Nation rather than as a rigid fundamental law insusceptible of whatever fair and sound interpretation and construction may be needful to advance its two chief objects, the perpetuity of the "more perfect Union," and "the general welfare" of the *whole people* by, and for whom, alone, it was ordained. No one has a deeper reverence for our *Charta Maxima*, but I cannot look upon the *written* instrument as a "fetich" to be blindly worshiped as the *sole* source of our national powers.

Our ultimate judicial tribunal, the Supreme Court, has the power to decide any judicial question properly before it, in absolute freedom from the views of any of its prior decisions. Reluctant though it be to reverse any of its well-considered decisions, it has done so several times. And there can be no doubt that if that greatest of courts should believe that a new application, or a new departure in constitutional construction were warranted and needed, that then no servitude to precedents would hamper its independent action.

So that, if a proper case should arise, it would be competent for the Court to reconsider what has heretofore been said about "delegated powers," "manufactures," "insurance," the "income-tax," etc., and decide according to the law as held by the judges constituting the Court at the later hearing.

The beneficent wisdom of the national Constitution largely resides in the fact that *it is expressed in general terms*, with no attempt to formulate a detailed "code." Thus it is that it possesses a BENIGN ELASTICITY responsive to sound judicial interpretation, and is susceptible of adaptation to such compelling needs of the people as evolutionary changes may require.

And the Supreme Court, through Wilson, Marshall, Taney, Curtis, Chase, Field, Fuller, Harlan, and others, have made frequent use of that "elasticity" in ascertaining the National powers.

"Benign elasticity," not "rigid inflexibility," is the quality of all American law. At its best estate no law can be more than the best practicable *modus vivendi*. The words of the fun-



damental or of the statute law, can never be "fixed," "certain" or determinate until they are practically "applied" in a concrete case by a court of competent jurisdiction; and this is because of the unavoidable inadequacy of words, however carefully chosen. Fortunately, the principles which govern "judicial construction" are elementary and simple.

The basic error in respect to the Constitution consists in holding that *all* governmental powers of the "United States" come from and rest upon the *written* Constitution of 1787; that no national and international powers of that entity existed before that instrument was ratified; that there are no *inherent* powers in the National Government; and that there is not any *unwritten* Constitution of the United States.

These errors are of wide acceptance; have much of support in past decisions in various courts, and in debates and text-books.

I speak in opposition to this view, and not without, I trust, a becoming respect for those who differ.

The Convention, which made the Constitution of 1787, received its "charter" for that purpose by virtue of the following Resolution of the Congress, passed February 21, 1787:

"*Whereas*, there is provision, in the Articles of Confederation and Perpetual Union, for making alterations therein, by assent of a Congress of the United States, and of the Legislatures of the several States; and whereas, experience hath evinced that there are defects in the present confederation; as a mean to remedy which, several of the States, and particularly the State of New York, by express instructions to their delegates in Congress, have suggested a *Convention* for the purposes expressed in the following resolution; and such convention appearing to be the most probable means of establishing in these States *firm national government*—

"*Resolved*, That in the opinion of Congress, it is expedient that on the second Monday in May next, a convention of delegates who shall have been appointed by the several States, be held at Philadelphia, for the sole and express purpose of revising the Articles of Confederation, and reporting to Congress and the several Legislatures such alterations and provisions therein as shall, when agreed to in Congress, and confirmed by the States, render the Federal Constitution *adequate to the exigencies of government* and the *preservation* of the Union."



To secure "a firm national government" was the duty of those delegates.

Accordingly, upon organization of the convention *Randolph* introduced 15 Resolutions as subjects of discussion ; subsequently they were expanded to 19, and were the ground-plan of the Constitution. Nearly everyone used the word "national," "national executive," "national legislature," "national judiciary," etc. Indeed, one may fairly say that the idea of making a *firm nation* was the dominant thought of a majority of the convention.

Let me speak of the "pre-constitutional powers" exercised under what may be called the "unwritten Constitution," prior to the *writing* of 1787. Many of those powers were re-enumerated and re-stated by the written Constitution of 1787.

From the first Colonial Congress of 1774, and under the Articles of Association of October, 1774, until the Articles of Confederation of 1778, "in the third year of the independence of America," the government of the United Colonies was purely a congressional or parliamentary government.

The several "Colonies," "Provinces" or "Commonwealths" had previously been directly governed by the Crown of England. It was the Declaration of Independence of July 4, 1776, which for the first time declared them to be independent "States." The "Union" (of the *united people* of the several colonies) began with the Continental Congress of 1774 ; and that union was subsequently styled the "United States" by the immortal Declaration of 1776. So late as July 6, 1775, the Continental Congress, in behalf of the *United Colonies* of North America, adopted an address to the inhabitants of Great Britain, entitled "A Declaration by the Representatives of the *United Colonies* of North America, now met in Congress at Philadelphia, setting forth the causes and necessities of their taking up arms."

And it was not until after July 4, 1776, that the several Colonies assumed to be, and actually were organized "States." And it is to the prior *de facto* existence of that *Union* of Colonies that the States as "States" owe their existence. This was the view asserted in *Lincoln's* first inaugural address :

"The Union is much older than the Constitution. It was formed, in fact, by the Articles of Association in 1774. It was



matured and continued by the Declaration of Independence in 1776. It was further matured, and the faith of the then thirteen States expressly pledged and engaged that it should be perpetual, by the Articles of Confederation in 1778. And finally, in 1787, one of the declared objects for ordaining and establishing the Constitution was '*to form a more perfect Union.*'"

Lincoln's view is abundantly confirmed by the historical facts of the period involved.

From 1774 to 1776 there was a *de facto* government opposed to the *de jure* government of Great Britain, and it resided in the Congress of the United Colonies. After 1776 there was the *de facto* Congressional government of the States—United, further defined by the Articles of Confederation of 1778.

The Treaty with Great Britain of 1783 and the written Constitution of 1787 culminated in the *de facto* and *de jure* Nation of the United States as it exists to-day.

The chief *national* and *international* powers of a nation are those of war, treaty-making, the control of commerce, post-roads, coinage, etc.; and all of these powers were exercised by the Colonies-United, and the *quasi* States-United, before any "State" was *organized*. None of them was exercised by or conferred upon any *individual* Colony or State; and the written Constitution of 1787 expressly forbade the exercise of these and all other *national* powers to any and all "States." As these powers are inherently essential to every independent and sovereign nation, they must reside in the Union, and in the Union only. The existence of these powers necessarily implies the existence of all other powers needed to secure their effective action.

Evolution, which has been at work ever since the first Continental Congress of 1774, has at last evolved the complete notion that the people of the United States constitute a "Nation," with all the powers of sovereignty that international law and custom declare to be inherent in, necessary to, and inseparable from Sovereign-Nationality.

The jealousy which the several States had for each other and their fear of the entity styled "the United States," were the chief obstacles in the way of adopting the written Constitution. That fear and jealousy sought to minimize National power, and vainly tried to emasculate it by more or less vague limitations.





Among the many acts of the States, in early opposition to nationality, these instances may be mentioned :

The Virginia and Kentucky Resolutions of 1798 and 1799 vehemently asserted the right of the States to judge of violations of the Constitution, and to resist them.

Josiah Quincy, of Massachusetts, declared that to erect Orleans (a part of the recent Louisiana purchase) into a State would be a virtual dissolution of the bonds of the Union.

New England opposed the 1812 War with England. Massachusetts bitterly objected to the power of the President to call out the militia.

The Hartford Convention violently opposed the power of the United States to call out the militia. This action of Massachusetts and Connecticut in time of actual war with a foreign enemy showed how slight a hold "nationality" had upon those who, as citizens of "States," were eaten up by jealousy of the National Government. The war debts of the several states, due to the United States in the Revolutionary War, and "requisitioned" under the Articles of Confederation, were never promptly or fully paid. Debts against States could not be enforced, although they were suable under the Constitution of 1787. Many States bitterly opposed that provision. From this cause came the Eleventh Amendment declaring that the judicial power of the United States should not extend to suits by aliens or citizens of another State against a State. This was the first attempt to narrow the national power by an Amendment. No other attempt to *narrow* will ever be made.

The courts and militia of Pennsylvania resisted service of a mandamus from the United States Supreme Court in the *Olmstead* case.

In Ohio opposition to the United States was vindictive in the extreme. The Virginia and Kentucky Resolutions was affirmed, and, in 1820, the United States Bank was actually *outlawed*, and made open to public robbery.

In 1832 South Carolina passed its act to nullify the National Tariff.

In one case Georgia hanged an Indian in despite of a writ of error from the Supreme Court.

In another case Georgia detained one, Winchester, in jail for eighteen months after the Supreme Court had pronounced his sentence illegal.



In Wisconsin controversy over the fugitive-slave law caused a convention to adopt resolutions much like those of Virginia in 1789.

In 1861 this feeling of anti-nationality, State Sovereignty, or the right of Revolution, as some contended, culminated in Secession and the Civil War.

From those horrors this great good has been evolved: The complete and assured permanency of the idea that *the United States is a "Nation,"* endowed with perpetuity, and embracing in its own entity all the powers needed for national, international and interstate purposes; and that whatever great powers of local, domestic or police quasi-sovereignty reside in the several States, the "States" are absolutely denuded of all the powers vested in the National Government.

The "Supreme Arbitrament of the Sword" settled this question. It has become a great "*political truth*" with which no judicial body can have any right to interfere.

In the greater proportion of litigations the "unwritten," or "non-statutory," or "judicial" law has as much power as that which is written; and, so it is true, that rarely can a just view be taken of a grave constitutional question without regarding the powers both of the unwritten and written Constitution.

The British Constitution is amorphous, and (practically) wholly unwritten; ours is the wonderful Charter written in 1787, as a great defining and remedial statute, and is a supplement to the pre-existing unwritten Constitution.

That "strict construction" of the written letter, which appeals to many, ignores the equally binding unwritten Constitution. The written and unwritten should be construed together. The unwritten warrants the claim for the broadest nationality; the written defines, shows procedure, and denationalizes the individual States, but abrogates no national, international, interstate, institutional, or fundamental power for "governing" which existed prior to the written instrument.

The Declaration of Independence first proclaimed the United Colonies to be free and independent States. Then it was, under and by virtue of the "Union" of the Colonies and of the Declaration that this *Nation* had its birth; and its Congress conducted its international affairs as a Nation, *for thirteen years before the Constitution* went into operation.

So far as the international powers of the Nation, born July 4,



1776, and still existing, are concerned, there has been no lessening of power under the National Constitution. The international power sprang, originally, from *nationality*, and from the natural right of *self-preservation*, and not from *delegated* powers which simply reaffirm *some* of those previously claimed and effectively used for thirteen years. All of our great institutional rights referred to in *Magna Charta* of 1215, in the Bill of Rights of 1688, and in the pre-Revolutionary colonial charters, so far as applicable, are part of our Constitution and there was no *need* of writing them in the instrument of 1787, for they had been written for centuries in the hearts of all who inherited or shared English freedom.

*James Wilson*, the greatest constructive jurist known to our history, in urging the ratification of the Constitution by the Pennsylvania Convention, gave strong arguments against inserting any Bill of Rights in the Constitution. It had received small demand in the National Convention; was unnecessary; mere surplusage; was dangerous if the *enumeration* should be incomplete. The majority of the States were without it. That Englishmen needed a Bill of Rights as a *gift* from the King; that "We, the People," were *givers*, and had no need to *give to ourselves* rights that had been immemorially enjoyed.

The Bill of Rights was added by *Amendments* I to VIII.

To contend, as many do, that the United States, as a Nation, lacks any of the broadest powers of sovereignty needed for self-preservation, for the general welfare, or for national perpetuity, is to put on shackles that do not suit the ideas which evolution has put into American minds of the present time.

I hold that not only does the Constitution, written in 1787 and put into operation in 1789, refrain from any abridgment of national powers; that it not only re-enumerated and reconfirmed the most important of them, but that it absolutely and explicitly *denuded* every State of every shred of national or international sovereignty. As well for the assurance of national power, as for the assurance of certain limited rights in the States, by excising their national powers, was this great instrument ordained by the collective people.

The 8th Section of Article I of the Constitution enumerates some of the great national powers of the Congress.

The 10th Section *denudes* the States of those and all national





and international powers, by declaring that no State should make any treaty, alliance or confederation; nor without consent of Congress levy imposts, or duties on imports or exports, except as needful for inspection laws; shall not keep troops or ships of war in time of peace without consent of Congress, coin money, etc., etc.

The Xth Amendment, declaring that the powers not delegated to the United States were reserved to the States, or to the people, seems, at first sight, to narrow the scope of the national authority. But a deeper view of the paramount power in a nation to maintain its own perpetuity and the general welfare of its own people, requires this amendment to be so construed as not to be in derogation of any of the powers *inherent in nationality*, or which had been possessed and exercised during our pre-constitutional period. It relates only to *delegatable* powers.

From dissociated Colonies under Crown government, to the United Colonies "associated" against the Crown was a long step towards the "Union" of the American people. Congressional Government, the Declaration of Independence, the Articles of Confederation, the Constitution of 1787, and its "more perfect Union," the great decisions of Marshall and of other members of the Supreme Court, the wager of battle and verdict of the Civil War, are all steps in that orderly and mighty evolution, which, at length, has firmly crystallized into the fixed plan of a *complete nationality*.

Day by day thoughtful citizens perceive the need of a greater degree of solidarity in government—action; a higher uniformity of law and law-administration. No one now fears the twin "bug-a-boos" of the early days—a standing army, or a strong general government. No one seeks to enlarge National powers *at the expense* of the States. The supremacy of the States, each within its own lawful scope of local and police powers, *to every extent not in conflict* with the needful and lawful acts of the National Government will be ardently upheld by the most earnest disciple of Wilson and Hamilton. But, *State Rights must not destroy, or impair National Rights*.

It should be unthinkable that a State or city should have the right to make a local law of its own which would surely violate a paramount National treaty, and thus possibly embroil the Nation in a foreign war.



Or that the National Government should not have the power to make reclamations upon the inhabitants of a State or county to refund the amounts paid by the United States in settlement for local violations of treaty or other international rights.

The fears and doubts as to the success of the great experiment of 1787, in making a Constitution which, for the first time, established a firm Government, dual in character, National *and* State, have wholly disappeared in more than a century of unequalled triumph.

May we not believe that not one of the great men who feared and doubted or opposed it in that age and its conditions, would fear and doubt if he could step upon the stage *now*, and realize the strength, adaptability and splendor of the structure they built so much better than they knew? There is not one of those masters of statecraft, if now alive, who would not hail with joy every honest effort to give *strength* to the *Nation* they created. For the whole body politic they wrought as no men ever wrought; and we, proud to be their descendants, should strive to carry on their work as they would, if they were now participant in the evolution of the twentieth century.

## II. AMENDING THE CONSTITUTION

In no respect did the Framers of the Constitution show greater wisdom than they did in these two ways:

1. They made it very difficult to *amend*.
2. They clothed the Supreme Court with such vast power to construe the Constitution as to make that court, practically, a *Continuous Constitutional Convention*.

Out of some 2,000 proposed amendments, only fifteen have been adopted.

Your Speaker believes that if time permitted, he could show that not one of them was necessary or beneficial: all were matters of surplusage, except the XIth Amendment, which is a dark stain, forbidding an alien, or a citizen of another State to sue a State. This, in effect, authorizes a State to repudiate its debt by refusing relief to the creditor by suit. Some day the Supreme Court must decide that that Amendment is so violative of the highest moral law and public policy that it must be held to be an improvident and unlawful interpolation in the



Constitution. Fortunately, but few cases arise under its provision.

Every one of the XV Amendments have been made *legislatively*; that is, each was proposed by two-thirds of the Congress, and ratified by the legislatures of three-fourths of the States.

The Conventional, or other and higher method, has not been used. In this method, whenever the Legislatures of two-thirds of the States request the Congress to do so, it shall call a Convention "to propose Amendments." After the Amendments are proposed by the general Convention, they require to be ratified by the Conventions of three-fourths of the States. There is no word of limitation as to the number, nature and character of the amendments which the Convention may propose for the ratification of the forty-six other Conventions.

A vigorous propaganda is at work to *alter* the Constitution so that Senators of the United States shall be chosen by direct popular vote, instead of by the ancient mode of election by the Legislatures.

This question, according to President Taft, is not a party question, and so I shall use great freedom in referring to it.

To me, it seems to be one of the worst results of an over-fervent Populism, and is directly opposed to all past Democracy.

I object to this Constitutional change of far-reaching importance, and said last month in the New York "Evening Post":

"According to Mr. Jordan's pamphlet (secretary of the "House of Governors"), there will be held a "Conference of Governors," at Frankfort, Ky., November 29 to December 3.

One of its chief objects will be to make a concurrent effort to secure applications, in proper form, from the Legislatures of two-thirds of the States, requesting the Congress of the United States to propose an Amendment to the Constitution, so that Senators shall be chosen by direct popular vote, instead of by the Legislatures.

The pamphlet states that twenty-nine States have passed resolutions in favor of the alteration; that twelve of the applications will be thrown out because the Legislatures did not apply to Congress; and that four other applications have not been duly filed. This seems to indicate that the friends of the measure did not understand the Constitution well enough to know how to "apply." The proposition is that the Legislatures of two-thirds of the States shall request the Congress to call a



convention to propose amendments, which, when duly ratified by other conventions of three-fourths of the States, shall become effective. Such an application, when properly made, is mandatory upon the Congress.

(1.) The proposed alteration, in my judgment, is subversive, not only of the Constitution, but also of the system of our government. That system is *representative* and *not popular*, government. For one hundred and twenty-three years the system has been efficacious. Why change an established and effective system?

(2.) The framers did not believe in committing the public welfare to the popular, or universal suffrage vote. No President has ever been chosen by direct popular vote. The "electors" intervene, as a possibly needed safeguard.

(3.) The two-chamber system, Senate and House, was devised that each might be a check and counterpoise upon the other. The qualifications, manner of election, and duties of the two houses were made as different as possible. In the House of Representatives, directly chosen, each member represented his own particular district. The Senate was chosen by the State, through its Legislature, as a "State" and a political body.

*This provision is the highest protection of the individual rights of a State given by the Constitution.* Proportionately, the Senate has furnished ten men of the first order of ability to one by the House. This is due to the fact that members of the Legislature are nearly always better fitted to be legislators than the average voter; and therefore better qualified to select men for the Senate.

(4.) Every one of the fifteen reasons advanced in the pamphlet rests upon the fallacious assumption that a popular vote *is* wiser and better than a Legislature's vote; and that a "popular" government is better than a "representative" government. But we are in the second century of notably successful representative government, and the change proposed is utterly radical, subversive and destructive of the old system. To me, it seems that the change would be the height of unwisdom—and the baleful expression of extreme Populism, or extravagant over-democratization.

Does any one seriously believe that the proposed forty-seven conventions of "modern politicians" would be as wise as the





1787 conventionists? And yet they would have the power to give us a new Constitution wholly different from the old one!"

It is conceivable that there *might* be put into the Constitution provisions so repugnant to moral and natural law, and "inalienable" rights that no court could sustain or enforce them.

For instance: A provision that a criminal should execute himself; that he should be put to death without trial; that upon a man's death his property should always escheat to the Government; that the Government could take private property without compensation; that no man should choose his own occupation, but be controlled therein by some officer; that a man might marry his own niece; that there should be absolutely universal suffrage for all residents; that none should own weapons; and that there should be no heirship.

Any such provision would go far towards destroying the value of the past decisions of the Supreme Court.

When Senators shall be chosen, as are Representatives, by direct vote of the populace, there would be no true Senate; instead thereof there would be two "popular" bodies, both of a kind; in effect, two Houses of Representatives, one of about four hundred, and the other of ninety-two members; a large House, and a small one, with grave danger that the smaller would be little more than an echo of the larger.

Not a House of Lords, but *The House of States* is our National Senate, when its members, as under the Existing Constitution, are chosen by the States *quâ* States, by the votes of its Legislators. The Senators thus chosen represent each State as to its *Statehood*. The recent Conference of Governors did not act upon the matter. If the General Convention were called there would be *no limit* to the number, nature and character of the Amendments that "tinkerers of the Constitution" would suggest.

Some would favor the above change of our Government from a representative form to a popular form. Some would try to have the name of God or Church inserted in the Constitution; the use or sale of tobacco or liquor wholly forbidden; unqualified suffrage to be universal; a demand for the income tax, and so on, *ad infinitum*.

But, the injury to Representative Government that surely



will follow the "Popular Election of the Senate," is less destructive than its logical successors the "Referendum" and the "Recall." The one opens the gate for the other two.

The first head of this ill-favored Cerberus degrades the Senate, the second rends the Congress, and the third devours the dignity and authority of the Judiciary and the Executive.

Why have a Congress, an Executive and a Judiciary, when all their functions may be usurped and performed in some fashion by multitudinous balloting of the people in countless and continuous mass meetings of twenty million voters? Why prefer long-tried simplicity when we may have untried complexity? I profoundly believe that every one of these alleged "remedies" is born of ignorance, or of criminal partisanship; and that they are all in clear violation of Article IV., Section 4, of the Constitution:

"The United States shall guarantee to every State in this Union a *republican form of government*."

The word "republican" must be held to mean *that form of republican government which the Constitution itself established and defined in 1787*. No State or National Government whose Executive, or whose Congress, or whose Judiciary is not chosen and qualified as therein prescribed, or that lacks the tenure and functions and powers therein set forth, is, or can be "Republican" within the meaning and clear intent of the Constitution of the United States.

Such a government may have some of the attributes of a republic, but clearly it has not those prescribed by the illustrious Charter of 1787.

Under this section the Supreme Court has, in my judgment, lawful authority to declare void every Statute which thus "subverts" our "republican form of government". !

### III. THE SUPREME COURT

This great Tribunal is unique in its transcendent powers; it has always had some great men to pronounce its judgments. It has almost always decided properly and wisely. But as even its exalted members are mortal men, with man's infirmities, that Court cannot be infallible, and divinely inerrant.

It is the highest duty cast upon every competent citizen to watch and study the decisions of that court of ultimate authority upon the constitutionality of an act of Congress.



And to discuss, criticise, and in every way short of disobedience to its direct authority, *oppose* its occasional error. Only thus can there be given to that Court, in the next analogous case, such additional light and argument as may lead the Court itself to correct its own errors.

Let me say that I regard our national Supreme Court as a direct means provided so effectually to interpret and to construe the Constitution and its powers, inherent or unwritten, as well as written, that it shall always be able to justify every *new application* of constitutional powers that the Congress may declare to be expedient and necessary for the general welfare of the people; for the Congress *alone* can pass upon expediency or necessity. That, having that power, the Supreme Court is, virtually and in real effect, a "Continuous Constitutional Convention," so wise and so safe that there cannot be any need of further Amendments, either by method of Conventions or of Legislatures.

Let me close with an attempt to formulate:

#### A NEW DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE :

### THE CREED OF TRUE NATIONALISM

I. WE BELIEVE in one God, "one people," one Union, and one National Government having all powers needful to meet every national, international, interstate and general exigency. And that those powers are paramount over those of the States, which possess all powers necessary for their local rights and government, so long as their exercise does not militate against the general welfare of the Nation, or injure another State, or its people.

In support of this belief, we cite the past protection and blessing of the God of our Fathers ; the results of our wager of battle for the Union ; the words "One people" used in the Declaration of Independence ; and these express and conclusive words of the Constitution (Article VII, second clause):

"This Constitution, and the Laws of the United States which shall be made in pursuance thereof, and all Treaties made, or which shall be made, under the authority of the United States SHALL BE THE SUPREME LAW OF THE LAND ; and the Judges in every State shall be *bound* thereby, anything in the Constitution and Laws of any State to the contrary notwithstanding."





2. WE BELIEVE in The Sufficiency of the Constitution as It Is; and that by their wise use of general terms as to the relative powers of the Nation and of the States, the inspired Framers gave to that great instrument a "benign elasticity" readily responsive to sound interpretation, construction and application by the Supreme Court in every governmental exigency that may arise under the new conditions of the twentieth century which were unforeseen at the close of the eighteenth century.

In support of this faith, we point to the great decisions of Marshall and others, speaking for the Supreme Court, and imparting to the Constitution a needful and vitalizing force by means of sound interpretation, construction and application of its fundamental principles to concrete and specific cases. And we believe that without such construction the Constitution would have been an instrument inadequate to the objects for which it was made: for the inadequacy of language is such that the words and meaning of every law must be construed by the light of *all related law* and facts, and then be applied to each particular "case."

3. WE BELIEVE that ours is a Representative, and not a Popular government, except in the power of the people, by their votes, to choose *other representatives* in the place of those whose conduct has been unsatisfactory to the people; and in the power to exercise the right of revolution when necessary, by amendment, re-organization or otherwise.

4. WE BELIEVE in, and heartily accept, in the plain and usual meaning of their words, without any gloss or explanation, the dominant provisions of the Constitution, and most profoundly, its first and most important executory sentence, which declares its authorship, its enactment, intents and objects:

"WE THE PEOPLE of the United States, in Order to form a more perfect Union, establish Justice, insure domestic Tranquility, provide for the Common Defence, PROMOTE THE GENERAL WELFARE, and secure the Blessings of Liberty to ourselves and our Posterity, do ordain and establish this CONSTITUTION for the United States of America."

5. WE BELIEVE in, and fully accept in their manifest meaning the plain words of the *taxation clause*, Article I, section 8, Clause 1:

"The Congress shall have power to lay and collect Taxes, Duties, Imports and Excises, to pay the Debts and PROVIDE FOR



THE common Defence and GENERAL WELFARE of the United States."

Reading together these two vital sentences, and remembering the inherited principles of free government, we hold that no government justifiably can exist for any other purpose than to PROMOTE AND PROVIDE FOR THE GENERAL WELFARE OF ITS PEOPLE.

6. WE BELIEVE that generally the Supreme Court, following the method of Marshall, has been and will be able soundly to interpret, construe and apply the provisions of the Constitution to every new condition.

If not competent to that high function their successors must be, and they will escape the occasional past errors of the Court due to too great a regard for "precedents" and over-narrow Conservatism.

Only in this way can evolution perform its function in developing our system of government so that it may keep pace with the betterments in the other fields of life. Conservatism for its own sake may become so stolid as to exclude evolutionary improvement; we will hold fast to that which is both old and good, but will not fail to embrace that which is new and better.

7. WE BELIEVE that the Congress, as the sole representative of the Nation in the functions of Legislation, is the *sole* department of the Government to determine the *expediency, adequacy, or necessity* of any law it may enact; and that issues as to necessity, adequacy, or expediency are purely *political* in character, and cannot be subjected to the consideration of any court.

8. WE BELIEVE that although the Supreme Court was, in part, established by the Constitution, nevertheless, it did not exist as an organized and operative body, until life was breathed into it by the Judiciary Act of the Congress. In some degree, then, that Court was the creature of the Congress, and should never permit itself to declare an Act of Congress unconstitutional and void, except only when the Act violates beyond all reasonable doubt some specific provision of the Constitution, or some ancient right or liberty of the people.

9. WE BELIEVE that under the ancient and Constitutional liberty of the "right of petition," it would be lawful for the Congress to amend the Judiciary Act so that it would become



the duty of the Supreme Court to pass upon the Constitutionality of an Act of Congress, upon the petition of the President, as the Executive, and of the President of the Senate, and the Speaker of the House of Representatives, in behalf of the Legislature, as if upon "a case stated," without waiting for an actual "case" between parties, to come before it.

10. While we believe in the paramountcy of the Government of the United States, we also recognize that it is not always convenient or expedient to *exercise* that paramount power. Power to act does not imply that the power *must* be used.

I pray you, Gentlemen, drink with me the noble toast—

THE "TRUE CONSTITUTION"—THE CONSTITUTION AS IT IS!

NOTE.—The dominant thought<sup>s</sup> of this address <sup>were</sup> ~~was~~ expressed in my paper printed in the *Albany Law Journal*, of August, ~~1911~~. They have been adopted, since then, by many writers and publicists.

J. C. C.



## Publications of the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America

1. "The Settlement of New York," by George Rogers Howell, March 18, 1897.
2. "The Battle of Lexington," by Hon. John Winslow, May 13, 1897.
3. "George Clinton," by Col. R. E. Prime, December 15, 1902.
4. "Washington, Lincoln and Grant," by Gen. James Grant Wilson, April 6, 1903.
5. "Early New York," by Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt, January 15 1904.
6. "Thomas Hooker, the First American Democrat," by Walter Seth Logan, February 19, 1904.
7. "Early Long Island," by Hon. Wm. Winton Goodrich, March 16, 1904.
8. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1904.
9. "The Philippines and The Filipinos," by Maj. Gen. Frederick D. Grant, December 10, 1904.
10. "Some Social Theories of the Revolution," by Theodore Gilman, January 31, 1905.
11. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1905.
12. "The Story of the Pequot War," by Thos. Egleston, LL.D., Ph. D., December 15, 1905.
13. "Distinctive Traits of a Dutchman," by Col. John W. Vrooman, February 23, 1906.
14. "An Incident of the Alabama Claims Arbitration," by Col. Ralph E. Prime, March 23, 1906.
15. "Banquet Addresses and Memoir of Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt," May 14, 1906.
16. "Constitution, By-Laws and Regulations of the Order, and List of Members of the General Court, with By-Laws, and List of Members of the New York Society," November 1, 1906.
17. "Some Municipal Problems that Vexed the Founders," by Rev. Wm. Reed Eastman, December 14, 1906.
18. "A Vanished Race of Aboriginal Founders," by Brig. Gen'l Henry Stuart Turrill, U. S. A., February 14, 1907.
19. "List of Officers and Members of the New York Society," November 15, 1907.
20. "The Hudson Valley in the Revolution" by Francis Whiting Halsey, December 13, 1907.
21. "American Territory in Turkey; or Admiral Farragut's Visit to Constantinople and the Extra-territoriality of Robert College," by Ralph E. Prime, LL.D., D. C. L., February 14, 1908.
22. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1908.
23. "Some Things the Colony of North Carolina Did and Did First in the Founding of English-Speaking America," by William Edward Fitch, M. D., December 11, 1908.
24. "Colonial Legends and Folk Lore," by Hon. John C. Coleman, January 20, 1910.
25. "The Origin, Rise and Downfall of the State of Franklin, Under Her First and Only Governor—John Sevier," by William Edward Fitch, M. D., March 11, 1910.
26. "Proceedings on the Dedication of the Tablet Erected by the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America, on the Site of Fort Amsterdam at the United States Custom House, New York City," September 29, 1909.
27. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1910.
28. "Commodore Isaac Hull and the Frigate Constitution," by Gen. James Grant Wilson, D. C. L., October 28, 1910.
29. "Some Aspects of the Constitution," by Joseph Culbertson Clayton, December 14, 1910.





# Early Colonial Efforts for the Improvement of the Indians



"Steadfast for God and Country"

---

An Address by  
REV. EDWARD PAYSON JOHNSON, D.D.,  
New Brunswick, New Jersey,  
delivered before  
The New York Society  
of the  
Order of the Founders and Patriots of America  
at the  
Hotel Manhattan, New York,  
February 14th. 1911.



Officers of the New York Society Order of the  
Founders and Patriots of America  
1910—1911

*Governor*

GEORGE CLINTON BATCHELLER, LL. D.,  
130 Fifth Avenue, New York.

*Deputy Governor*

THEODORE GILMAN,  
55 William Street, New York.

*Chaplain*

REV. EDWARD PAYSON JOHNSON, D. D.,  
New Brunswick, N. J.

*Secretary*

WILLIAM EDWARD FITCH, M. D.,  
355 W. 145th. Street, New York.

*Treasurer*

MATTHEW HINMAN,  
416 Broadway, New York.

*State Attorney*

GOODWIN BROWN,  
135 Broadway, New York.

*Registrar*

JOHN C. COLEMAN,  
100 Broadway, New York.

*Genealogist*

LOUIS ANNIN AMES,  
99 Fulton Street, New York.

*Historian*

REAR ADMIRAL EBENEZER S. PRIME, U. S. N.,  
Huntington, Long Island.

*Councilors*

1908-1911

COL. RALPH EARL PRIME, Yonkers, N. Y.  
EDGAR ABEL TURRELL, New York.  
CHARLES W. B. WILKINSON, New York.

1909-1912

MAJOR GENERAL FREDERICK D. GRANT, U. S. A.  
THOMAS REDFIELD PROCTOR.  
HOWARD KING COOLIDGE.

1910-1913

GEN. STEWART L. WOODFORD.  
THEODORE FITCH.  
COL. GEORGE E. DEWEY.



**“Steadfast for God and Country.”**





## EARLY COLONIAL EFFORTS FOR THE IMPROVEMENT OF THE INDIANS

No one can understand the relations of the pioneer settlers of America with the Indians except as the result of careful and impartial study of Colonial conditions. For years past this topic has awakened deep and increasing interest; and books and magazine articles have appeared from many different quarters. Within the last six months two elaborate monographs have been published, each one evidently the product of sincere conviction and pains-taking research; and yet, to my own certain knowledge, the gravest injustice is done by the first of these books to the early Dutch colonists, and by the other to the Pilgrims and Puritans of New England. Some years ago I gave much time during many months to special historical study of the New York Colonial period, and to examination of certain original sources; and so at length I came to honor very highly the Dutch pioneers of the Upper Hudson and the Lower Mohawk. Within the past year a similar earnest and careful endeavor to learn the *very truth* as to early New England conditions and tendencies has inspired a higher appreciation of the designs and dealings of my own Puritan ancestors and their fellow-Colonists.

One who tries to write history may be *incompetent*, because of intense personal prejudice; or because he is not so anxious to set forth the facts accurately, and in balanced relation to each other, as to establish and illustrate some favorite theory. It may further be, as it has been claimed, that it is *impossible* for *anyone* to be such an impassioned worshiper of Abstract Truth as to be absolutely judicial,—as to relentlessly strip himself of all personal indignation, sympathy or imagination. And I suspect that if an author should succeed in making himself thus perfectly and painfully *impartial*, his book would be so colorless and “faultily faultless” as to have no interest for anyone. So I take it, the author of any special historical study, whether for public address or publication, must be allowed some latitude for a little “special pleading,”—and a “free hand” for the exploiting of his favored theory;—even if the real facts of history are thrown somewhat out of balance, or are dealt with less in the judicial spirit than



in the spirit of the advocate. And I hasten to say, that the grace of such kindly indulgence which I crave for this present humble effort I freely grant should be shown to the two authors referred to above, as well as hereafter, and to all others whose spirits move them to explain and exhibit real conditions of the Historic Past.

Now pray notice, that in any one of the first settlements of this New World the Colonists were *not all equally* moral, generous or godly, even as they were *not all* equally intelligent, industrious or courageous. And while such differing classes of people will be found in any community, and in any age, yet these moral contrasts will necessarily be more marked in *pioneer* communities;—because even more than to others, the opportunity in the New World is peculiarly attractive to the loafers, the criminal classes, the dissolute and “lewd fellows of the baser sort” of the older communities across the Sea. Time and again the good people of Plymouth, as well as Massachusetts Bay, of Albany as well as New Amsterdam, learned that the worst troublers of their peace were of their own people;—and this far less frequently in heated religious controversies than in brawls, and breaches of the peace, and provocations of Indian suspicion, hatred and hostility. Time and again the peaceable and kindly *nineteen-twentieths* of the Colonial community found themselves “hostages to fortune,” the hard fortune of discord, or famine, or horror of Indian warfare through the greed, cruelty or treachery of the restless and vicious *one-twentieth*. Preeminently in Colonial times the well-disposed multitude suffered as victims of the evil-disposed few; and most conspicuously of all is this true of the Indian Wars of our first American Century.

It must be confessed that the Indian in his native state is not peculiarly interesting or winsome:—and yet in that original state he is not so vile, treacherous and bloodthirsty as he has been often pictured. While he has great faults, which are his through temperament and long lines of heredity, he is also capable of the noblest virtues and endeavors of our Higher Humanity. And in the early days the Indian was thus correctly diagnosed by many of the *Colonists*, who therefore eagerly desired and patiently labored for his highest welfare. As already intimated, this claim is directly controverted by many, and in particular by the latest important work published,—a series of three volumes containing



1856 pages, worthy in many respects of great admiration and all confidence.

I wish now to quote from Mr. Herbert Milton Sylvester's exhaustive treatise, "The Indian Wars of New England," volume I, page 82:—"The Indian was never at any time the debtor of the Puritan settler. He was a target not only for Puritan bullets, but as well for the prayers of the Puritan clergy, who were wont to give thanks when the English bullet did its work especially well. Increase Mather was notably fervent in thanksgiving upon these occasions. The Indian was the unfortunate victim of every avaricious whim of the white man, who scrupled not to plunder him of his peltry, or his corn, as the occasion offered." Next I quote from page 84:—"From the beginning almost the Indian was a creature to be made drunk, and despoiled after he had been debauched". Again I quote from the same volume, page 163:—"There was never any inclination of the English to share with the Indians any part of the civilization for which they stood. On the other hand, the English not only coolly and premeditatedly despoiled the savage of his patrimony, but deliberately set to work to compass his destruction. The English justified their action on the ground that their right was a God-given one to exterminate the heathen which was early crystallized into the 'pious belief' that they were the messengers of Divine Providence, through whom was to be wrought out the redemption of the land to which they had come, in the interests of that religion which was the fundamental of their every code of action."

Yet again I quote, page 164:—The Puritan "began by antagonizing the savage; and with the whistle of the first savage arrow he had marked the men who wielded this rude weapon for the slaughter. Instead of being a Gospel-bearer, seeking the fruits of peace and good-will, he clothed himself in the garb of subtlety, and without a spark of mercy, set himself to the acquisition of the domains of the original dwellers, and their extermination."

I do not know whether Mr. Sylvester is of Anglican, or Catholic, or infidel affiliations; but his ever-evident and contemptuous dislike of the Puritan belief and believer, as well as his fierce condemnation of each and all the Colonial dealings with the Indians, incline one to locate him as far away as possible from



the early or later Puritan theology. There must have been some other occasion for his bitter animadversions than merely the hot displeasure set aflame by the findings of his prolonged historic research. In this suggestion I may be in error ; and yet I know that usually "straws show which way the wind blows." It is said that "one who looks long enough will always find what he sets out to find." Mr. Sylvester, in his truly great historical work, apparently begins his inquiry with the purpose of finding in each succeeding war the Puritan always the crafty and vindictive aggressor, and the Indian always the pitiable and defeated victim. He also writes from the point of view of the War Historian, and in his spirit, and after his methods. The unpretentious paper of this evening is offered with the design of proving the early Pilgrims and Puritans *not* always, wholly, universally unjust and covetous, and *not* always, wholly, universally scornful, hostile and brutal to the Indian. And while this paper is not an exhaustive history, but simply a half-hour's historical inquiry, I am confident that even if the inquiry is from the point of view of the Missionary Student, and in his spirit, nevertheless it will clearly show that many, *very many*, of the Early Colonists recognized in the Indian a brother, whom they long and conscientiously tried to win, improve and transform.

Joseph Tracey, in his noble History of American Missions, reminds us that—"The first settlement of New England was a missionary enterprise. The Pilgrims left Holland, and came to this continent for the sake of preserving their rights as Englishmen by settling under English jurisdiction ; preserving their descendants from the contagion of false doctrines and corrupt examples; and above all of extending the Redeemer's kingdom in lands where Christ had not been named. Such is their own account of their own motives. The charter given by the King to the Plymouth Company mentions the depopulation of the country by pestilence and war, and its freedom from the claims of any Christian power; and then goes on to say:—"We have thought it fit, according to our kingly duty, as much as in us lieth, to second and follow God's sacred will, rendering reverend thanks to His Divine Majesty for His gracious favor in laying open and revealing the same unto us before any other Christian prince or state; by which means, without offense, and as we trust to His glory, we





may with boldness go on to the settling of so hopeful a work, which tendeth to the reducing and *conversion of such savages as remain wandering in desolation and distress, to civil society and Christian religion.*" And in this the Charter professes to favor the "worthy disposition" of the petitioners to whom it was granted. And efforts for the conversion of the natives were not delayed. In December, 1621, within a year after landing on Plymouth Rock, Elder Robert Cushman informed his friends in England that many of the Indians, especially of their youth, were found to be of a very tractable disposition both to religion and humanity; that if the Colonists had means they would bring up hundreds of their children both to labor and learning; and that the young men in England who desired to further the Gospel among those poor heathen would do well to come over, and spend their estates, their time and their labors in that good work.

It was indeed impossible during the first years of their contest with hardships and privations to make such public and systematic efforts for the conversion of the Indians as were desirable; but individuals, both ministers and laymen, appear to have seized such opportunities as they could command to make known the Gospel to their savage neighbors. . . .

And a few natives gave satisfactory evidence, living and dying, of real conversion to God. In 1636 the Plymouth Colony enacted laws to provide for the preaching of the Gospel among the Indians; and, with the concurrence of the principal chiefs, for constituting courts to punish misdemeanors; measures which could not have been adopted had not the influence been already very considerable. The Massachusetts Colony was established with similar designs. Its Charter declares, that the earnest purpose of King Charles I is "to winne and incite the natives of the country to the knowledge and obedience of the only true God and Saviour of mankind."\* The seal of the Colony had as its device the standing figure of an Indian, crying forth the Macedonian appeal, "Come over and help us!" And here, as at Plymouth, from the beginning of the settlement, occasional efforts diffused some knowledge of Christianity, and were followed by some

---

\*Hutchinson's Collection, 19.



instances of conversion. Both Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay Colonies were missionary colonies.\*

It would seem that the appeal of Elder Robert Cushman, referred to above, must have stirred the hearts of some of the young men of England, at least some of the young men of gifts and consecration, if not young men of great estates; for a few years later young men began to come, and kept on coming, who proved themselves, by self-denying and noble lifetime labors, the true Christian brothers of the Indians. In February, 1630, came Roger Williams, and in November of 1631 came John Eliot, men who proved their faith by their works, and held until their death the affectionate confidence and reverence of all the Indians who knew them.

The second year after he landed Williams devoted himself steadily and systematically to learn the "tongue of the natives," for "my soul's desire was to do them good." "God was pleased to give me a painful, patient spirit, to lodge with them in their filthy smoke-holes, (even while I lived in Plymouth and Salem), to gain their tongue."† Both at Plymouth and at Salem, he gave much time to visiting various villages and tribes of Indians, winning their friendship and confidence, learning their ways and their language, that he might the more effectually win their attention to the truths of Christianity. He was from first to last so truly the brother of the Red Man that Indian faith and affection were implicitly and always his. When banished from his Salem home, he made his way with a few friends to a permanent home among the Narragansetts, on the site of the present city of Providence, R. I. Thereafter he devoted himself especially to trade with the Indians; and his business life corresponded so well with his teachings and professions, that he never lost the confidence and friendship of the Indian kings Canonicus and Miantonomoh; and in the councils of the tribe his influence was supreme when the hostile Pequots tried to persuade the Narragansetts to engage in a war of extermination against the whites.‡ In 1643 appeared Roger Williams' most scholarly work, "The Key into the Languages of America," published in London, England, "which attracted instant attention from philologists

---

\* Tracey's Hist. Am. Miss., 11 ff.

† Roger Williams by Carpenter, 28.

‡ Quoted from "Early Missionary Work among the Indians," pp. 3 and 4.



and other scholars, . . . . and "won for him a place as a man of letters." \*

The first missionary to the Indians of New England whose life was entirely given to this work was Thomas Mayhew, Jr. With his father of the same name he was living in 1636 at Watertown, Mass. Five years later, having obtained from the agent of Lord Stirling a grant of Martha's Vineyard and the neighboring islands, including Nantucket and the Elizabeth Islands, the Mayhews, father and son, began a settlement at Edgartown, on the eastern shore of Martha's Vineyard. The father became the "civil governor" of the region; and the son was so deeply affected by the intellectual and moral degradation of the surrounding Indians, that he began the study of their language, and the work of teaching the gospel to them. Hiacoomes, one of the leading Indians, soon became a convert, and learned to read; and immediately began to make strong appeals to his brethren against their idolatry and superstitions, and to make known to them the truths of the gospel. This was in 1645. Young Mayhew, having obtained the affection and confidence of the Indians, and learned their language, in the year 1646 commenced preaching and public instruction. He visited the natives in their abodes, slept in their smoky wigwams, spent much of the nights in teaching them Scripture history; and before the close of the year 1650, a hundred Indians entered into solemn covenant to obey the Most High God.

Two years later there were 282 Indians who had embraced Christianity, of whom eight were medicine men or priests. Mr. Mayhew's success encouraged him to make still greater efforts for the good of the Indians; and he sailed for England in 1657, to obtain the means of greater usefulness; but the ship in which he sailed foundered at sea, and he and all on board perished. Mayhew's excellent father, having no prospect, after his son's death, of procuring for the Indians a stated minister, began himself, at the age of seventy, to preach to the natives, as well as to the English. Such was his philanthropic zeal that he sometimes traveled on foot through the woods nearly twenty miles, to perform these labors of love. He was instrumental in bringing the Indians of Gay Head to receive the Gospel, though they had

---

\*R. W. by C., 178.





resisted all previous efforts to evangelize them.\* In King Philip's War, in 1675, the Indians on the mainland were largely confederated together against the whites; but in Martha's Vineyard the aged Thomas Mayhew and his grandson John were so well satisfied with the fidelity of their Indians, that they employed them as guardians, furnished them with necessary ammunition, and gave them instructions how to act for the common safety in this time of great peril. So faithful were these Indians that they not only rejected the solicitations, urgent and repeated, of the hostiles, but when emissaries landed from the mainland, they took them forthwith, even though sometimes their own relations, to Gov. Mayhew, "to attend his pleasure." The English gave themselves no anxiety for their own defense, but left it entirely to their Indians; and so while the storm of war fiercely raged on the mainland, the people of all these islands enjoyed the calm of peace.†

Thomas Mayhew died, with his zeal for the gospel and the welfare of the Indians unabated, in 1681, in the 93d year of his age. The grandson, John Mayhew, for eight years was associated with his grandfather in this noble work; and for eight years after devoted his life to his Indian friends. He taught alternately in all their assemblies, and assisted in all their ecclesiastical concerns. Five years after his death, his eldest son, Experience Mayhew, in March, 1694, began work among the Indians, taking the charge of five or six congregations. Having been familiar with the Indian language from infancy, he was employed by the Commissioners of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in New England to make a new version of the Psalms, and of the Gospel of John; which work he executed with great accuracy, completing it in 1709. He died in 1758, aged 85, after more than sixty years as Indian missionary. And *his* son, Zechariah Mayhew, ordained at Martha's Vineyard in 1767, gave the remaining 39 years of his life to the instruction of the remnants of the red-men. He also was employed by Mass. Soc. for the propagating of the Gospel among the Indians; of whom at Gay Head there were 212 in Oct. 1806.‡ A remarkable record! Five generations of Christian workers, son, father, grandson, great-grandson, and

\*Sprague's Annals, I, 131-3.

†Cf. Barber's Hist. Coll. 154.

‡For the Missionary Mayhews, consult Sprague's Annals, vol. I, pp. 151-3, and Mass. Hist. Coll., First Series, I, p. 205.



great-great-grandson, covering a period of more than 160 years, from 1643 to 1806, in the same region to the same tribe;—surely this is a true Apostolic Succession, devoted to a truly apostolic work, in the nobly apostolic spirit;—this record radiantly ennobles the Vineyard and Nantucket Indians, as well as the honored name of Mayhew for all the Christian centuries.

Richard Bourne and his friend Thomas Tupper, gentlemen of wealth and earnest puritans, were first purchasers and early emigrants of the Sandwich lands of the Cape Cod peninsula in 1637. At once they became interested in the welfare and conversion of the natives, who were very numerous in that region; the pestilence which swept away the Plymouth Indians not having reached that locality. They lost no time in learning the language and entering upon the work; "though not educated for the ministry, they turned their attention to gospelizing the Indians." Mr. Tupper's attention was given to the Indians northward and westward of Sandwich, and near the head of Buzzard's Bay; and the church which he founded near Herring Point was supplied by a succession of ministers of his name; the last pastor, his great-grandson, died in 1787. Mr. Bourne purchased land as a permanent location for his Indians, in 1660, fixing upon Mashpee, and securing the lands there to the Indians and their descendents forever.

He believed it vain to propagate Christian knowledge among any people without a territory where they might remain at peace from generation to generation, and not be dispossessed. The deed was confirmed by the Colony Court "so that no part or parcel of the lands could be bought by, or sold to, any white person or persons without the consent of all the Indians, not even with the consent of the General Court." Mr. Bourne writes that his Indian reservation is five miles in width and ten miles long; that the Indians number about 500, and that he has four assistants employed regularly, and four other occasional helpers.

It is not generally known that the benevolent plans and labors of Richard Bourne are still bearing fruit, more than 250 years after he began his work of Christianizing the Mashpees. A remnant of the tribe of nearly 400 souls still occupies and owns the ancient domain, embracing sixteen square miles, about 10,500 acres on Vineyard Sound, secured to them by the wisdom, philanthropy and consecration of Bourne, his son, grandson, and later successors in the spiritual guardianship of these In-



dians.\* The Mashpees, although there are *now* comparatively few residents of unmixed Indian blood, are happy and prosperous in their beautiful reservation; and as their missionary pastor reports, fully up to the average of white communities in piety and morals. It may seem strange to the traveller to-day to find fifty miles southeast of Boston "an Indian township, owned and officered by Indians its schools and churches supported by Indians, and its public affairs conducted by them." A generous bequest by a London minister in 1711, in trust to Harvard College, during nearly 200 years has yielded annually some \$350 for the support of Gospel work among the Mashpees.†

Twenty-eight years after the planting of a colony from Plymouth across Massachusetts Bay at Eastham, among the Nauset Indians of Cape Cod peninsula, came the Rev. Samuel Treat, to be the pastor of the little handful of whites, but especially the missionary pastor of the Nauset Indians. (By the way, these Nausets are the Indians with whom the Plymouth colonists under Miles Standish had their first passage at arms.)

Mr. Treat's field of labor was the entire stretch of Cape Cod from Yarmouth to Provincetown. At once he began the study of the native language, and soon was able to teach the Nausets, and preach to them intelligibly. Gradually he acquired great influence over them, and not only reduced them to an orderly and civilized state, but brought many of them to a practical knowledge of Christianity. In 1693, writing to President Mather of Harvard College, Mr. Treat says: "There are 500 Indians within the limits of our township; . . . they have four distinct assemblies in four villages, . . . in which they have four teachers of their own choice, of the sober, well-affected and understanding persons among them, who duly preach to them when I am not with them. These Indian teachers repair to my house once a week, for instruction. . . . They are very serviceable by their labors to the English vicinity, and have all along, since the wars with their nation, been very friendly to the English, and forward to serve them in that quarrel; their deportment, converse and garb being more manly and laudable than any other Indians that I have observed in the province." He treated them with affability and kindness, frequently visited them in their wigwams, and

---

\*Mass. Hist. Coll., First Series, vol. 3, p. 199, and vol. 1, p. 159.

†Chas. Burr Todd's "In Olde Massachusetts.")



with cheerfulness joined in their festivals. They venerated him as a pastor and loved him as a father.\* He labored among them with great zeal and fidelity for 45 years; but before his death, in 1717, he was saddened by a great lessening of his Indian parishioners; a fatal disease, supposed to have been a fever, swept off a large number of them; and twenty-five years after Treat's death very few Indians remained in the township.

Mr. Treat died during the most remarkable snow-storm in the annals of New England. Because of the tremendous depth of the snow a path could not be dug from the house; and his body was kept for several days, while a tunnel was being dug through which he was borne to the grave by the affectionate and deeply grieving Indians.†

In November, 1631, there came to Boston a young man of 27 years, by name John Eliot, whom the Indians of Eastern Massachusetts were soon to know, and long to know, as their best English friend. The next year, with certain friends from old England, he settled at Roxbury, and began a pastorate which was to continue for nearly sixty years, and closed only with his death. Beloved and revered as Eliot was by all who knew him, he was chiefly prominent among all the ministers of New England because of his remarkable zeal and success in working among the Indians. There were nearly twenty tribes of Indians within the English plantation, although they strikingly resembled each other in language, manners and religion. Cotton Mather says that "all the good men of the country were glad of Eliot's engagement in such an undertaking; the ministers especially encouraged him, and those in the neighborhood kindly supplied his church, and performed his work for him in Roxbury, while he was abroad laboring among them that were without. Eliot began his efforts for the Indians by hiring a native to teach him the language; and with laborious care and skill he reduced his information into a grammar, which afterwards he published. How insuperable the difficulties of his work must have seemed to anyone save Eliot; but to his zeal, perseverance and consecration nothing was impossible. When at length his Indian grammar was completed, well might he write the triumphant legend across his work, "Prayer and

---

\*Morton's Memorial, 388, 9.

†Sprague's Annals, 185, 6.





pains through faith in Jesus Christ will do anything.”\* Eliot’s early work was at Nonantum, the home of the noble old Indian Waban, four or five miles west of Boston, and at Neponset, some four miles south. According to Eliot’s dear friend Gookin, there was a three-fold constraining motive in Eliot’s work; first, the glory of God in the conversion of these poor, desolate souls; then his own compassion and ardent affection to them; and, last but not least, the honorable redemption on his part of the covenant and promise that New England people made unto their king when he granted them their patent, viz., that one principal end of their going to plant these countries was to communicate the Gospel unto the native Indians. Let me briefly show Eliot’s sensible way of working with the Indians. He prepared two catechisms in the Indian tongue, containing the principles of the Christian religion, a smaller for children and a larger for older persons. These he communicated to the Indians, larger or smaller, gradually, a few questions at a time, according to their ability to receive them. The questions taught one day were to be answered next question day. After beginning his meeting with prayer, first he would catechise the children, who usually answered quite readily. Then he would encourage them with some small gift, as an apple, or a biscuit, which he had bought for that purpose.

And so by his prudence and winning practice the children were induced with delight to memorize the principles of the Christian religion. Then he undertook the catechising of the older persons, who generally answered judiciously. After this he would preach from some passage of Scripture for about 45 minutes; after which the Indians were at liberty to ask questions; the whole service closing finally with a prayer.

Eliot removed his largest Indian village from Nonantum after a time to Natick, 18 miles southwest of Boston, on the Charles River. This colony had some 29 families and about 145 persons, who were settled upon some 6,000 acres of land, through the influence of Eliot granted to the Indians by the General Court of Massachusetts. This was the most important of all the villages of the so-called “praying Indians”; and here their principal courts were held. Beside Natick, Mr. Eliot had the Indians established in thirteen additional villages, with an esti-

---

\*Mather, vol. 1, 503, 6, 7.



mated Indian population of 1,100. Early in this good work Eliot was confronted one day in a journey through the wilderness by the sachem Cutchemaquin, who commanded him to cease his labors at the peril of his life; but Eliot calmly replied: "I am about the work of the great God, and my God is with me; so that I neither fear you, nor all the sachems in the country; I will go on—do you touch me, if you dare!"

His zeal prompted him to encounter fearlessly the worst dangers, and to submit patiently to incredible hardships. In one of his letters he writes thus: "I have not been dry, night nor day, from the third day of the week unto the sixth; but so travelled, and at night pull off my boots, wring my stockings, and on with them again, and so continue. But God steps in and helps. I have considered the word of God, I Timothy 2, 3: "Endure hardship as a good soldier of Jesus Christ." He made a missionary tour every fortnight; and at different periods visited all the tribes in Massachusetts and Plymouth colonies, pursuing his way as far as Cape Cod. . . . His efforts to advance both the temporal and spiritual welfare of the Indians were never intermitted; he enlisted several other ministers to cooperate with him, whose labors were greatly blessed; and he lived to see twenty-four of the natives engaged in preaching the Gospel. In September, 1661, he was enabled to publish the New Testament in the Indian language, and three years later the Old Testament was added. Then followed the publication of primers, grammars, psalters, catechisms, *The Practice of Piety*, *Baxter's Call to the Unconverted*, and *Shepard's Sincere Convert and Sound Believer*, all in the Indian tongue, and translated by Mr. Eliot. He manifested his friendship for the Indians by the most vigorous efforts for their protection during Philip's War in 1675. . . . Though he was subjected to great reproach, and even bitter hostility, for his friendly services in their behalf, yet nothing could quench either his charity or his zeal. Everything was said against the missionary Eliot and the magistrate Gookin which could be uttered by the foul mouth of the vulgar, or from the lips of some whose education was liberal, and whose religion should have made them more candid, but who stimulated the bitter sarcasms of the multitude. Nothing could shake the resolution of such men, fully conscious of rectitude and we never behold Eliot to more advan-



tage than he appears when he pleads the cause of these poor, friendless beings.\* And in this connection it is well to speak a word concerning Eliot's friend and fellow-helper, Major General Daniel Gookin. For a time a Virginia planter, he ere long decided to remove to New England (probably influenced chiefly by the differing social and religious conditions), and became a freeman of Massachusetts in 1644. He was appointed superintendent of all the Indians who had submitted to the Provincial Government. Naturally therefore he knew more about the Indians than all the other magistrates of the Colony, and warmly supported Eliot in his efforts for the improvement of the savages. The outbreak of that series of horrors known as "King Philip's War" wrought even worse havoc among the Indians friendly to the Whites than to the English themselves. King *Massasoit* was the early and constant friend of the people of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay; but his son *Philip* was utterly unlike his father. He was somewhat of a statesman, as well as a great warrior; and he clearly foresaw, as the necessary result of the fast-gaining occupying of the country by the English, that the Red Man must soon completely change his habits and nature, and consent to become the inferior and the tributary race, or else the hated whites must be promptly driven out or exterminated. And like the shrewd warrior and diplomat that he was, chagrined that he already had delayed altogether too long a time, King Philip skilfully brought together in a wellnigh universal conspiracy the Indian warriors of New England in a life-or-death struggle for the destruction of the English.

Very few, however, of the "praying Indians" entered into any of King Philip's designs. Eliot loudly asserted their innocence, and thereby he brought upon himself no little odium. The friendly Indians suffered from both parties; some were put to death by Philip for betraying his designs; some fell in battle against his followers; some were executed by authority of the Massachusetts Colony as the suspected accomplices of Philip; some were the victims of a partisan warfare carried on against all Indians indiscriminately. Five hundred "praying Indians" were removed to Deer Island and other islands in Boston Harbor, as the authorities believed for the greater mutual safety. When released

---

\*Eliot's Biographical Dictionary, 185.





from confinement, they found their towns in ruins, and their fields laid waste, and all their hopeful beginnings in Christian civilization utterly blasted. They never recovered from the discouragement and despondency created by the events of the war.\* This cruel war was a bitter grief to Eliot, disappointing and destroying his dearly cherished plans for his Indian friends, and practically blotting out the earnest and successful work of years; yet so long as the old "Apostle" lived, he never ceased to regard his Indian converts with paternal solicitude. Well-nigh broken-hearted as Eliot was over the sweeping away of thousands of his beloved Indians by the flood of war, as well as because of the white man's suspicious and revengeful intolerance, nevertheless he still kept the same sunny, uncomplaining spirit so uncommon in weak, broken and disappointed old men. How significant of entire consecration and joyous self-sacrifice in behalf of human need and degradation were the noble old "Apostle's" words just before he breathed his last: "Alas, I have lost everything; my understanding leaves me, my memory fails me, my utterance fails me; but, I thank God, my *charity* holds out still." †

Other noble men there were who earnestly labored for the improvement of the Indians; let us not pass them by utterly and unnoticed.

James Fitch, the first minister of Norwich, Conn., was settled in 1660. Ten years later he began his work among the near-by Mohegan Indians. At first he met no opposition from either people or sachems; "till they discerned that practical religion would throw down their heathenish idols, and the tyrannical authority of the sachems. Then Uncas and Oweneco went away, and drew off their people, some by flatteries and some by threats, not allowing them to attend" the meetings of Mr. Fitch.

However a few still clung to their teacher; and with these individuals Fitch commenced a series of religious meetings which continued for several years. In 1674 the little Indian parish numbered thirty men and women, with a proportionate number of children. They had given up their ancient ceremonies, were acquainted with the principal doctrines of the Scriptures, and met together every Sunday to converse over what

---

\*Tracey's History of Amer. Miss., 16.

†Mather, I, 490.



they had heard. Weebax, the principal man among them, was capable of teaching the others, and of leading their devotions. The conversation of this man was so blameless that his worst persecutors were forced to respect and speak well of it. During one year the English Propagation Society granted Fitch 31 pounds for his services, and 10 for his Indian hearers.

In order to encourage the Indians, and give them a fixed place of residence, with the help of certain Norwich people Fitch gave them about 300 acres of land, which he secured to them as long as they should remain firm in their affection to Christianity, thereby exciting the envy of the other Mohegans.\*

Trumbull, in his *History of Connecticut*, tells us—(I, 237)—that the Mohegan Indians were a great defense and of essential service to Mr. Fitch and all the people of Norwich for many years. They kept out their scouts and spies, and so constantly watched their enemies that they gave early notice of their approach, and were a continual defense against them. For this purpose in times of special danger, they often moved their wigwams near the town, and were a great terror to the enemy. The stealthy approach of the hostiles was often thus detected and defeated. The little Indian congregation of Fitch had increased to about forty shortly before the breaking out of Philip's War. The descendants of the Mohegan Indians for whom Fitch labored were later instructed in religion by certain self-denying Christians, and a meeting-house was builded for them by the liberality of the citizens of Norwich and other towns; and further, they received an appropriation from the War Department of a few hundred dollars.†

About 1661 Abraham Pierson, minister of Branford, Conn., began preaching to the Indians in that vicinity, and continued to do so for several years. He must have preached at other places also, in particular to the Indians of Wethersfield; for in the records of the United Colonies for 1658 we find an order that 16 yards of cloth should be distributed out of the Mission Funds to the principal men of the Wethersfield Indians, as an encouragement to those who attended on Mr. Pierson's meetings, and refrained from their heathen worship, and from laboring on the Sabbath. Pierson received from the Propagation Society

---

\*De Forest's *Hist. Conn.*, 274 ff.

†Allen's *Biographical Dict'y*, 390.



in England for several years an annual salary of 30 pounds for his Indian work. The Rev. Jas. Fitch of Norwich in a letter to Maj. Gen. Gookin speaks of the limited success of Pierson—due to the same causes as his own limited success—because the greater part of the Indians showed such an aversion and perverse contempt for the Gospel of the White Man.\* And in this connection it is well to note that the State Colonial Commissioners offered to all Indians who would put out their children to “godly English people” a coat every year, beside food and clothing for the children. A man named William Thomson was employed for some time at an annual salary of 20 pounds to instruct the Cassassinamon Pequots. And in 1672 \$50 of the Society’s money was received by the Connecticut Commissioners for distribution among “sundry well-deserving Indians of the Pequots and thereabouts.” †

The Rev. John Cotton, Jr., from 1664 to 1667 was a fellow-laborer with the Mayhews on Martha’s Vineyard, preaching to the Indians as well as the whites during that time. In November, 1667, Mr. Cotton removed to Plymouth, and was pastor there for nearly thirty years. He was eminent for his knowledge of the Indian language; and during his life in Plymouth frequently preached to the Indians who lived in several congregations in the neighborhood. The whole care of revising and correcting Eliot’s Indian Bible, which was printed at Cambridge in 1685, fell upon him.\*

At a very early period after the first settlements on Long Island were formed, benevolent work for the Indians was undertaken. In 1653 the Rev. Mr. Leverich, one of the first purchasers of Oyster Bay, who had been studying the Indian language in Massachusetts, was employed by the Society for the Propagating of the Gospel in New England as a teacher of the natives on the Island. In this employment he spent five years. After the settlement of Easthampton, the Rev. Mr. James, the first minister of the town, moved with compassion for the ignorance and moral darkness of the Indians, commenced the study of their language, with the design of instructing them in the way of life and salvation. He was employed by the same Society about the year 1660, but just how long he continued in the work

\*De Forest’s Hist. Conn., 272, 3.

†Ditto, 273.

†Allen’s Biographical Dictionary, 312.



cannot be determined. His exertions were principally, if not exclusively, for the benefit of the Montauk tribe.\*

But upon careful examination we find among the Christian people of Old England, as well as New England, during our first Colonial century, an interest in the Indians, and a benevolent purpose, definite and systematic, permanent and widespread. In 1649, through the influence of Governor Winslow (who was then in England), and various statements and appeals prepared by Eliot, Gookin, Mayhew, Cotton, Shepard and others, and published in England, "The Society for the Propagating of the Gospel among the Indians of New England" was chartered by act of Parliament.

The Act provided that Governor Winslow, and fifteen others, "shall be a corporation for furthering so good a work, and that a general collection be made for the work through all England and Wales; that the ministers read the act to their people, and stir them up to liberal contributions." There was considerable opposition to the collections—and surely it would have been wonderful had there not been—"but subscriptions were opened in London and in the army, by the promotion of Winslow and others, and an amount collected which gave a yearly income of \$3,500 to \$4,000. Appropriations from this fund by the Commissioners were for printing books in the Indian language, sustaining preachers and teachers, and the education of Indian youth for the ministry. In 1661 237 pounds were disbursed for printing Eliot's Bible, 50 pounds for Mr. Eliot's salary, 30 for Mayhew's, 25 for Mr. Bourne's, and large sums for the education of young persons.†

May 16, 1643, the four Colonies of Plymouth, Massachusetts Bay, Connecticut and New Haven had formally entered into a "more near confederation and union", for "mutual aid and defense in matters of general concern"; and evidently the moral and spiritual condition of the Indians was commonly regarded as one of these "matters of general concern;" and when the Propagation Society was established in England six years later, it was provided that the funds of the Society should be received and disbursed by the Commissioners of the United Colonies—by the proposal, or approval, of Governor Winslow, himself one

\*Prime's History of Long Island, 103, 4

†Morton's Memorial, 380.





of the Commissioners for Plymouth, as well as a member of the Society's corporation—and these Colonial Commissioners, two from each of the four Colonies, readily consented to serve as requested; and for nearly forty years they and their successors honored their sacred stewardship with the utmost fidelity.\*

The General Court of Massachusetts Bay, in September, 1646, ordered the "giving of instruction in our laws to the Indians, *if times be safe*, once a year by interpreters."† In May, 1647, the General Court ordered "that ten pounds be given Mr. Eliot as a gratuity from this Court in respect of his pains in instructing the Indians in the knowledge of God; and that order be taken that the 20 pounds per annum given by the Lady Armine for that purpose may be called for and employed accordingly."‡ Later another enactment followed, ordering that two ministers should be sent "to make known the Heavenly Council of God among the Indians." Soon after Eliot's apostleship began, an Indian department of Harvard College was founded—the building being large enough to hold twenty students, and costing between 3 and 4 hundred pounds. This money was provided by the English Society, chiefly at the instance of the New Englanders. And although this Indian College was soon bereft of the students for whom it was designed, it continued to serve the natives, as the printing-house from which versions of the Scriptures and text-books in their own language were issued.§

The relentless outworking of the scientific law of "the survival of the fittest" is clearly illustrated in the irresistible wasting away of the savage nations. Instinctively fond of bloodshed and plunder, unconquerably averse to the quiet, yet strenuous, toils of peace, the Red Man's doom was sure, unless he could bring himself to a new disposition and manner of life. "The Indian Wars of New England," one after the other,—sometimes inspired by savage chieftains fiercely set on exterminating the whites, sometimes provoked and aided by the jealous Frenchman,—could not well have had a different issue.

Maddened by their lust of war, by their jealousy of the steadily growing and multiplying English settlements, as well as by the flatteries, deceits and bribes of misguiding friends,—the In

---

\*Correspondence of the Colonial Commissioners.

†Winthrop II, 372.

‡Winthrop II, 372.

§Mass. E. H., 312, 315.



dian leaders *would have war*, and nothing but war; and war brought their fatal undoing. The country was too small for these two alien and wilfully irreconcilable races; and inevitably the weaker, less developed, less compact race was overwhelmed utterly, defeated and dispersed.

The steadfast English *friends* of the Indian were *many* even after the frightful experience of Indian war; but each successive war changed friends to enemies, who were convinced that the only safe way to deal with the Red Man was to slay him, or exile him, or enslave him.

Multitudes wished it were otherwise; better than we can ever know they realized the horror of the alternative; and yet they believed that alternative absolutely imperative, or else their dear ones and they must perish horribly. Yet some men believed in the Indian to the end, and loved the Indian, and lived for the Indian,—and by their own experiences and successes justified the wisdom of their mission. The Mayhews held the Vineyard Indians to industry, peace and Christianity for a century and a half; Richard Bourne held the Mashpees to a long, unbroken amity with the English; Samuel Treat trained the Nausetts to love the arts, the Gospel and the Prince of Peace. And, had it not been for French mischief-makers and emissaries of Satan, and a few fierce, sullen irreconcilables like Sassacus and King Philip, the other tribes might have been won, at least in large measure, to live peacefully with their English neighbors, and to trust the same Saviour, and love the same God.

I trust that I have made good my contention for some real honor, and humanity among the early Colonial neighbors of the Indians.

The spirit and dealings of all the Puritans, or even the Pilgrims, I do not attempt to justify, or even extenuate. Some good and honorable men always distrusted the Indian, always disliked him; and early and easily came to hate him fiercely, and doom him utterly to destruction. But there were other good and honorable men, and *many* of them, who realized the Indian's limitations, appreciated his possibilities, loved him for his own better self's sake, and with a Pauline consecration lived and labored to bring him to the Wisdom and the Heaven of the just.



## Publications of the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America

1. "The Settlement of New York," by George Rogers Howell, March 18, 1897.
2. "The Battle of Lexington," by Hon. John Winslow, May 13, 1897.
3. "George Clinton," by Col. R. E. Prime, December 15, 1902.
4. "Washington, Lincoln and Grant," by Gen. James Grant Wilson, April 6, 1903.
5. "Early New York," by Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt, January 15, 1904.
6. "Thomas Hooker, the First American Democrat," by Walter Seth Logan, February 19, 1904.
7. "Early Long Island," by Hon. Wm. Winton Goodrich, March 16, 1904.
8. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1904.
9. "The Philippines and The Filipinos," by Maj. Gen. Frederick D. Grant, December 10, 1904.
10. "Some Social Theories of the Revolution," by Theodore Gilman, January 31, 1905.
11. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1905.
12. "The Story of the Pequot War," by Thos. Eggleston, LL.D., Ph. D., December 15, 1905.
13. "Distinctive Traits of a Dutchman," by Col. John W. Vrooman, February 23, 1906.
14. "An Incident of the Alabama Claims Arbitration," by Col. Ralph E. Prime, March 23, 1906.
15. "Banquet Addresses and Memoir of Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt," May 14, 1906.
16. "Constitution, By-Laws and Regulations of the Order, and List of Members of the General Court, with By-Laws, and List of Members of the New York Society," November 1, 1906.
17. "Some Municipal Problems that Vexed the Founders," by Rev. Wm. Reed Eastman, December 14, 1906.
18. "A Vanished Race of Aboriginal Founders," by Brig. Gen'l Henry Stuart Turrill, U. S. A., February 14, 1907.
19. "List of Officers and Members of the New York Society," November 15, 1907.
20. "The Hudson Valley in the Revolution" by Francis Whiting Halsey, December 13, 1907.
21. "American Territory in Turkey: or Admiral Farragut's Visit to Constantinople and the Extra-territoriality of Robert College," by Ralph E. Prime, LL.D., D. C. L., February 14, 1908.
22. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1908.
23. "Some Things the Colony of North Carolina Did and Did First in the Founding of English-Speaking America," by William Edward Fitch, M. D., December 11, 1908.
24. "Colonial Legends and Folk Lore," by Hon. John C. Coleman, January 20, 1910.
25. "The Origin, Rise and Downfall of the State of Franklin. Under Her First and Only Governor—John Sevier," by William Edward Fitch, M. D., March 11, 1910.
26. "Proceedings on the Dedication of the Tablet Erected by the New York Society of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America, on the Site of Fort Amsterdam at the United States Custom House, New York City," September 29, 1909.
27. "Banquet Addresses," May 13, 1910.
28. "Commodore Isaac Hull and the Frigate Constitution," by Gen. James Grant Wilson, D. C. L., October 28, 1910.
29. "Some Aspects of the Constitution," by Joseph Culbertson Clayton, December 14, 1910.
30. "Early Colonial Efforts for the Improvement of the Indians," by Rev. Edward Payson Johnson, D.D., February 14, 1911.

F 83199.6

6340 1











